ISSN 2520-4920 (Print) ISSN 2616-4566 (Online)

## Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature

文学跨学科研究

Volume 6, Number 4
December 2022



Published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong

## Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature

文学跨学科研究

Volume 6, Number 4
December 2022

#### **Editor**

Nie Zhenzhao, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies

#### **Associate Editors**

Wu Di, Zhejiang University Wang Yong, Zhejiang University

**Director of Editorial Office** 

Yang Gexin, Zhejiang University

#### **Published by**

Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong

**About:** *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* ("ISL") is a peer-reviewed journal sponsored by Guangdong University of Foreign Studies and Zhejiang University and published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company (Hong Kong) in collaboration with the International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism. With a strategic focus on literary, ethical, historical and interdisciplinary approaches, ISL encourages dialogues between literature and other disciplines of humanities, aiming to establish an international platform for scholars to exchange their innovative views that stimulate critical interdisciplinary discussions. ISL publishes four issues each year in both Chinese and English.

International Conference for Ethical Literary Criticism (ICELC, since 2012) is an annual international conference for academics and research-oriented scholars in the area of literature and related disciplines. ICELC is the flagship conference of the International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism which is an international literary and cultural organization aiming to link all those working in ethical literary criticism in theory and practice and to encourage the discussions of ethical function and value in literary works and criticism.

*Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* is registered with ISSN 2520-4920(print) and 2616-4566(online), and is indexed by Arts and Humanities Citation Index. It is also included in EBSCO, MLA International Bibliography and Annual Bibliography of English Language and Literature.

**Submissions and subscription:** As the official journal of International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism (IAELC), *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature* publishes articles only from members of IAELC, and their submissions presented in the annual convention and forums will be accepted for publication in priority. Those authors who are not members of IAELC are encouraged to apply for membership of the association before their submissions. All submissions must include a cover letter that includes the author's full mailing address, email address, telephone numbers, and professional or academic affiliation. The cover letter should indicate that the manuscript contains original content, has not previously been published, and is not under review by another publication. Submissions or subscription should be addressed to: isl2017@163.com.

**Contact information:** Editorial office, *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*, 6 East Building, Zijingang Campus, Zhejiang University, 866 Yuhangtang Rd, Hangzhou 310058, P.R. China. Tel:+86-571-8898-2010

Copyright ©2017 by *Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature*. All rights reserved. No copy shall be made without the permission of the publisher.

### **Advisory Board**

Massimo Bacigalupo / Università di Genova, ITA

Michael Bell / University of Warwick, UK

Charles Bernstein / University of Pennsylvania, USA

Vladimir Biti / University of Vienna, AT

Marshall Brown / University of Washington, USA

Knut Brynhildsvoll / University of Oslo, NOR

Stefan Collini / University of Cambridge, UK

Khairy Douma / Cairo University, EGY

Luo Lianggong / Central China Normal University, CHN

Byeongho Jung / Korea University, KOR

Anne-Marie Mai / University of Southern Denmark, DEN

Wolfgang Müller / Friedrich-Schiller University Jena, GER

Marjorie Perloff / Stanford University, USA

John Rathmell / University of Cambridge, UK

Claude Rawson / Yale University, USA

Joshua Scodel / University of Chicago, USA

Shang Biwu / Shanghai Jiaotong University, CHN

**Igor Shaytanov** / Problems of Literature, RUS

Inseop Shin / Konkuk University, KOR

Su Hui / Central China Normal University, CHN

Galin Tihanov / Queen Mary University of London, UK

Wang Songlin / Ningbo University, CHN

Zhang Xin / Guangdong University of Foreign Studies, CHN

#### **Contents**

563-568	The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies
	Nie Zhenzhao
569-582	The Ethical Structure of the Taxi-Based Narrative: Focusing on Taxi
	Crazy Rhapsody
	Myungsim Yang
583-605	Reading Park Kyung-ni's Kim's Daughters from the Perspective of Ethical
	Literary Criticism: Focusing on Ethical Representation and Ethical Knots
	of "Otherized Subjects"
	Soyoung Kim
606-621	Ethics of Korean International Adoptees' Utilization of Cyberspace and
	DNA Technology
	Jin Suk Bae
622-630	Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Identity
	Jiang Wenying
631-639	Ethical Identity and Ethical Choice in Top Girls
	Liu Maosheng
	Yang Junting
640-652	Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Attributes of Innovation in
	Diffusion in UK
	Li Yinbo
653-666	Thought Experiments in Science, Ethics and Politics: Cosmic Selection in
	the Trilogy of <i>Three-Body Problem</i>
	Liu Ge
	Li Yun
667-676	The Construction of Literary World in Haruki Murakami's Killing
	Commendatore
	Ren Jie

677-689 Tropics of Discourse around Ethics: A Criticism of Hayden White's Historical Poetics

Zhang Su

690-704 Economic Ethics in the *Old Testament*Yang Jian

705-719 A Model of Success for Journal Publication under the Philosophy of "Dialogism": Ralph Cohen and *New Literary History* in Its Forty Years

Li Siyi

Yang Feng

720-728 Retooling, Composing and Connecting: New Trends in Research on the History of Danish Literature

He Chang

729-733 Colonial "Brain Text" in British Diaspora Narrative: A Review of Modern and Contemporary British Diaspora Literature Studies

Fang Yuan

734-738 British Formalist Aesthetics from Chinese-Western Dual Perspectives: A
Review of British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice
Ma Ye
Dai Xianmei

739-746 Sound of Silence: A Review of A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on

Contemporary Western Literary Theories

Wang Yingzi

#### 目 录

569-582 出租车叙事的伦理结构:以旅日作家梁石日的《出租车狂想曲》为中心

梁明心

583-605 从文学伦理学批评视角解读朴景利的《金药局家的女儿们》:他者 化主体的伦理表征与伦理结 金昭英

622-630 文学伦理学批评关键词:伦理身份 蔣文颖

631-639 《顶尖女子》中的伦理身份与伦理选择 刘茂生 杨俊婷

640-652 文学伦理学批评理论对英传播的创新属性分析 李银波

653-666 伦理、科学与政治的思想实验——《三体》三部曲中的宇宙选择 刘 舸 李 云

667-676 村上春树《刺杀骑士团长》的文学世界建构方式 任 洁

677-689 以伦理为轴心的转义:海登·怀特历史诗学评析 张 谡

690-704 《旧约》中的经济伦理

杨建

705-719 "对话"理念下成功办刊的典范: 拉尔夫·科恩与《新文学史》 四十年

李思伊

杨枫

720-728 重组、构建和联结: 丹麦文学史研究新动向 何 畅

729-733 英国流散叙事中的殖民主义"脑文本":评《现当代英国流散文学研究》 方 圆

734-738 中西互鉴视域下的英国形式主义美学:评《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》

马 晔

代显梅

#### 人文研究的科学转向1

#### The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies

#### 聂珍钊(Nie Zhenzhao)

内容摘要:科学技术的飞速发展推动了人文研究的科学转型或转向(scientific turn),这种转向首先是传统人文观念的革新。人文科学的研究需要从伦理上清除障碍,摒弃传统上"眼见为实"的客观主义观念和"意识形态"的抽象主义观念,而应该坚持科学主义观念。人文同科学的融合尽管是大势所趋,但是二者的融合需要理论的支撑和引领。建立在意识形态基础之上的现有人文理论大多难以完成这一使命,因此我们需要寻找或建构新的理论,而文学伦理学批评的理论能够在促使人文同科学的融合方面发挥作用。只有同科学结合在一起的文学理论才能把我们从传统的伦理羁绊中解脱出来,才能从科学的视阈认识和理解人文,才能发现突破人文研究困境的出路在于科学。在可以预见的未来,传统的人文必然转化为数字人文和智慧人文,传统的人文研究必然转化为科学人文研究,文学研究必然如此。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;科学转向;数字人文;脑文本;智慧文学作者简介: 聂珍钊,广东外语外贸大学教授、外国语言文学学科建设云山工作室首席专家,欧洲科学院(Academia Europaea)外籍院士,国际文学伦理学批评研究会(International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism)会长,主要从事英美文学与比较文学、文学理论与批评、文学伦理学批评理论研究等。本文系国家社会科学基金重点项目"文学伦理学批评跨学科话语体系建构研究"【项目批号:21AWW001】、国家社科基金重大项目"文学伦理学批评的理论资源与对外传播研究"【项目批号:21&ZD264】的阶段性成果。

Title: The Scientific Turn of Humanities Studies

**Abstract:** The rapid development of science and technology has advanced the scientific transformation and resulted in scientific turn of humanistic ideas. For the adherence to the scientism, it is necessary to remove the ethical obstacles in the study of humanities and abandon the traditional objective thinking of the abstract ideology of "seeing is believing". Although the integration of humanities and science is the trend of our times, we should look for theories for its theoretical support and guidance. Most current theories are unable to fulfill this mission, so we need to find and construct new theories. The ethical literary criticism based on

<sup>1</sup> 本文是在第十一届国际文学伦理学批评研究会年会开幕式上的致词。

science can play a role in the integration of human literature and science. Only the literary theory combined with science can free us from the traditional ethical fetters, can we understand the humanities from the science, and find the way to break through the predicament of humanistic studies.

Keywords: ethical literary criticism; scientific turn; digital humanities; brain text; wisdom literature

Author: Nie Zhenzhao is Professor of Literature and Yunshan Chair of Foreign Language and Literature at Guangdong University of Foreign Studies (Guangzhou 510420, China), a foreign member of Academia Europaea and the President of the International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism, specializing in English and American literature, comparative literature, literary theory and criticism, and ethical literary criticism (Email: niezhenzhao@163.com).

尊敬的各位来宾,各位专家,女士们,先生们:

#### 大家好!

首先,欢迎和感谢大家出席第十一届国际文学伦理学批评研究会年会, 感谢大家勇于担当,不忘初心,参与文学伦理学批评跨学科研究的学术交流 与讨论、感谢大家对文学伦理学批评研究的深入发展做出的学术贡献。

感谢广东外语外贸大学校长石佑启教授、广东外语外贸大学英语语言 文化学院院长张欣教授、国际文学伦理学批评研究会名誉会长克劳德•罗森 (Claude Rawson) 教授、副会长加林·提哈诺夫(Galin Tihanov) 教授的精 彩致词。石佑启校长、张欣院长的发言不仅介绍了广东外语外贸大学及其在 外国语言文学学科建设方面取得的突出成就,而且也让我们看到广东外语外 贸大学在学术研究方面追求卓越的气概。广外深藏白云山中,绿荫树下做学 问, 白云深处觅真理, 学以致用, 行以致远, 谱写六十年辉煌。广外坚持学 术研究的国际路线,高峰学术探险,云端上下求索,百家争鸣,百花齐放, 全力支持举办第十一届国际文学伦理学批评研究会年会,我在此代表学会表 示衷心感谢。

Claude Rawson 教授和 Galin Tihanov 教授都是学识渊博的学术大师,在国 际学术前沿发挥引领作用。他们的致词高屋建瓴,内涵丰富,有很强的理论性、 针对性、前瞻性。Claude Rawson 教授不仅深刻评论了当前文学批评的现实, 而且发表了自己的看法和观点,试图为我们提供解决问题的有效良方。Galin Tihanov 教授发表了他对文学伦理学批评的深刻见解。通过对文学伦理学批 评的剖析,像他在他的著作 The Birth and Death of literary theory: Regimes of Relevance in Russia and Beyond (Galin Tihanov, 2019) 指出的那样,告诉我们 如何应对当前文学批评面临的理论死亡的危机(the fate and "death" of literary

theory) .

从新世纪初开始,中外学术界开始共同关注 Hilis Miller 提出的文学死亡 的命题。文学死亡的前提是文学理论的死亡。现有的文学理论把文学束缚在 诗歌、小说和戏剧之内,但这些被限定的文学越来越不被关注了,它们正在 被出现在由手机所代表的移动终端上的短视频、小故事、新闻叙事、适合手 机阅读的各种文本等所取代。目前出现的这些变化似乎渐成主流,但是如何 解释这些变化尤其是怎样从文学的角度看待这些变化,这是一个伦理问题, 但目前的文学理论既没有解释也解释不了。陈众议教授说, 归根结底, 一切 文学原理或文学原理学批评终究是为了研究、总结和引导文学批评,重塑真 善美。如果文学理论不能发挥引导作用,不能解决现实问题,理论就会因为 无用而死去。因此, 理论要么死亡, 要么新生。

陈众议教授指出, 文学概论和文学原理著述多如牛毛, 却大抵彼此雷同 或自相矛盾。文学研究当前最大的问题就是理论落后于时代以及无法回答现 实问题。这正是陈众议教授说的"文学理论'大破'之后远未大立"的问题。 20世纪以来,科学技术飞速发展,取得一系列重大成就,颠覆了传统观点。 例如, 基因技术对人体生命的解构, 认知神经科学对人脑奥秘的探险, 尤其 是随着人工智能科学研究的进展,神经网络计算机不仅可以模拟人脑认知和 思维过程,其能力甚至可以超越人脑和取代人脑。实际上,现在计算机所从 事的人文科学的大量工作,仅仅靠人及人的大脑是无法完成的。由于计算机 的能力已经大大超越了人的大脑,人也越来越依赖计算机的工作。可以说, 离开了计算机,我们几乎难以正常生活。这就是当下的科学现实,就是我们 面对的伦理选择,就是我们将要经历的科学伦理转向(scientific turn in literary ethics) .

科学对我们生活的影响同样出现在文学中。人工智能的创作不仅能够取 代甚至能够超越作家,微软小冰的诗歌创造就是一个范例。人工智能翻译以 及建立在大数据基础之上的文献搜索,为文学研究提供了前所未有的便利。 在科学的影响下, 无论是文学创作还是文学研究, 一切都在发生着巨大的变 化,但是唯独文学理论似乎仍然抱着传统的观念不放,少有作为。

在科学时代,以文学的阅读为例,我们是选择手机阅读还是选择书本阅 读?这是一个伦理选择的问题,也是一个阅读伦理的问题。我们不能否认书 本还会继续存在下去,因为一些过时的、逆潮流的东西也可能还有某种现实 的需要,例如中文字体的繁体已经很少在书写中使用了,但在书法写作中却 仍然大量运用: 古代文言文已经退出了历史, 但是作为一种知识仍然需要学 习。但是, 手机阅读同书本阅读相比, 其巨大的优越性决定了未来它必然会 成为阅读的主要方式。

科学技术的飞速发展推动了人文研究的科学转型或转向(scientific turn),这种转向首先是传统人文观念的革新。人文科学的研究需要从伦理上 清除障碍,摒弃传统上"眼见为实"的客观主义观念和"意识形态"的抽象 主义观念,而应该坚持科学主义观念。克劳德·罗森(Claude Rawson)教授 认为,文学与当代高新科技交融,"这样的研究守正创新,包容开放,具有真 正的学术探究精神,拓宽了经典的内涵,丰富了文学批评的方法。"(This is in the true spirit of academic enquiry, combining the consolidation of past knowledge and well-tried procedures with the other academic virtues of openness to enlargement of the canon and of critical method.)

人类文明发展史是以机器的发明创造为标志的。经过蒸汽机、电气机和 计算机所代表的三次工业革命,人类文明进步发生了翻天覆地的巨大变化。 尤其是 20 世纪后半叶由计算机及信息技术革命所代表的第三次工业革命,把 人类社会带入了一个全新的科技时代。当今社会,计算机技术已成为推动社 会发展的最重要技术工具,不仅促进了生物医药、基因克隆、人工智能、文 化教育等领域的革命,更是引导人们的思想观念发生了根本性改变。其中最 为重要的一点,就是传统上脱离科学的主观的意识形态研究,已经成为脑科 学和认知科学研究的重要对象,人文学科的意识形态研究开始转变为科学研 究, 开始向数字人文转向。

早在 1959 年, 斯诺 (C. P. Snow) 发表《两种文化》, 指出"整个西方 社会知识份子的生活"被分割成自然科学和人文科学领域的两种文化,即人 文文化与科学文化、并认为这两种文化各自构筑了自己的阵地、画地为军、 难以相互理解和沟通,从而阻碍了人类文明的进步。斯诺关于两种文化冲突 的命题的争论长达半个世纪,人们一直在寻找如何填充这条沟壑的良方。直 到今天,人文和科学之间的隔阂仍然存在。

斯诺敏锐地指出两种各自为政的文化阻碍了人类文明进步, 但是他似乎 并没有找到把相互分裂的文化连接起来的方法。是什么原因导致了科学文化 与人文文化的割裂? 我认为从根本上说,是人文文化的伦理和理论导致了两 极分化以及两种文化各行其是,不能融合贯通。一般而言,文化在某种意义 上说就是伦理,就是人在无形中自我约束的精神力量,就是人在习惯中形成 的自觉或不自觉遵守的规范。人文学者认为人文和科学是两种性质完全不同 的形态,一是意识形态,一是物质形态。正是人文学者甚至包括一部分科学 家在内长期坚持的人文意识形态观念,从理论上把人文同科学割裂开来。对 于人文学者而言,意识形态不是物质形态,它属于抽象的逻辑推理而不是客 观的科学验证。这种观念根深蒂固,并导致人文学者长期以同科学家相对的 思想家和哲学家自居,从而同科学背道而驰。

新世纪以来,计算机信息技术在人文领域的运用,推动了数字人文或科 技人文的快速发展。尤其是神经网络计算机学习的能力已经大大超越了人的 大脑,能够模拟人的大脑的思维,能够模仿人大脑的判断能力和适应能力, 能够延伸和扩展人的智能,因而也就能够通过深度学习在不远的将来超越人

的智能。人工智能的发展和运用不能不使我们重新认识意识形态,不能不让 我们摒弃意识形态观念而转向科学观念。

我们必须认识到一个必将出现的事实,那就是科学技术将越来越多的 干预人的大脑并最终能够取代人的大脑。以"神经网络机器翻译"(neural machine translation, NMT) 为例,通过使用计算机神经网络技术,利用人工智 能模仿大脑神经元进行语言翻译,从效率上说已经大大超过了人工翻译。再 如对人文数据的分析和判断,无论效率还是准确性神经网络计算机都超越了 人脑。再如超级计算机的运算能力,更不是人脑可以比拟的。从上世纪80年 代开始,人文学者一直在自觉或不自觉地运用计算机技术从事人文研究。新 世纪以来,人文研究在不知不觉中已经同计算机信息技术融合在一起,不可 能分开了。

人文同科学的融合尽管是大势所趋,但是二者的融合需要理论的支撑和 引领。建立在意识形态基础之上的现有人文理论大多难以完成这一使命,因 此我们需要寻找或建构新的理论, 而文学伦理学批评的理论能够在促使人文 同科学的融合方面发挥作用。

首先,同传统的文学理论相比,文学伦理学批评的跨学科体系能够在 伦理层面消除人文同科学之间的隔阂,把科学的观念融入人文的观念。其 次,文学伦理学批评的理论不是在意识形态而是在生物学和人类学研究成果 基础上建构的。由自然选择、伦理选择和科学选择构成的文明三阶段论不仅 是它的理论基础,而且也是它建构理论的科学路径。因此,文学伦理学批评 的理论就是将人文同科学融合在一起的理论。第三,文学伦理学批评坚持用 科学的方法、观念研究文学,研究人文。这一点同其它理论是完全不同的。 例如,它通过研究大脑的认知原理而建构的脑文本理论,就是将人文同脑科 学、神经认知科学以及文学融合在一起的研究成果。建立在认知神经科学基 础上的脑文本理论,不仅解释了人脑的思维过程和认知原理,而且还颠覆了 我们以意识形态为前提的传统认知。以语言研究为例,根据脑文本理论,语 言不是先在的而是生成的,语言只存在于生成的过程中,因此我们通常说的 语言研究在大多数情况下都是对文本研究的误读。正是因为我们混淆了语言 同文本的区别,所以至今我们也没有一个得到得到广泛认同的关于语言的 定义。

脑文本的理论可以让我们真正理解什么是语言。一般而论,语言就是人的 发音器官发出的表达某种特殊意义的声音。人的发音器官发出的声音不一定就 是语言,只有那些能够表达意义的声音才能称之为语言。从性质上说,语言只 是人通过发音器官表达存储在大脑中的脑文本的方法。当人的发音器官将脑文 本转化为声音的时候,语言生成了。当发音器官发出的声音结束,语言的生成 完成了,语言也因此而消失了。语言只存在于生成的过程中。从功能上说,语 言是人借助声音表达脑文本的方法,这同人用书写文本的方法表达脑文本是一

样的。无论语言还是文本,尽管它们都是表达脑文本的方法,但是前提必须有 脑文本的存在。没有脑文本,人不能发声,也不能书写。

脑文本是一个人文概念,同时也是一个科学概念。我在这儿以脑文本 为例讨论语言问题, 是想说明文学伦理学批评是一种科学理论, 说明与脑文 本相关的概念如语言、符号、文本、表达、意义、思维、认知等都是科学范 畴,说明只有同科学结合在一起的文学理论才能把我们从传统的伦理羁绊中 解脱出来,才能从科学的视阈认识和理解人文,才能发现突破人文研究困境 的出路在于科学。在可以预见的未来,传统的人文必然转化为数字人文和智 慧人文, 传统的人文研究必然转化为科学研究, 文学研究必然如此。

总之, 数字人文或者数字文学或者智能文学或者智慧文学, 无论我们 怎样称呼它们, 都是有待我们探险和研究的科学新领域。只有在科学的范畴 里,许多文学理论问题才得得到解答。在新的科学的文学理论建构之前,文 学伦理学批评用于文学研究以及人文研究,一定大有可为。

以上只是我的一点思考,肯定有许多不妥之处,我诚恳地请大家批评指 正。我希望诸位同人参与讨论,坚定历史自信、文化自信,坚持古为今用、 推陈出新,为人文研究的理论、观念、方法的更新共同努力,为人文研究的 科学化,为数字人文的发展做出积极贡献。

最后, 衷心感谢全体同仁对中国学术创新的支持与奉献, 同时也为诸位 的身体健康和学术研究取得新成就送上最美好的祝福!

谢谢大家!

## The Ethical Structure of the Taxi-Based Narrative: Focusing on *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody*

#### **Myungsim Yang**

Abstract: Focusing on *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody* ( 『タクシー狂躁曲』), a work by Zainichi writer Yan Sogiru, whose narrative unfolds around a means of transportation, the "taxi", this paper aims to explore the ethical significance of Zainichi literary texts by drawing on the theory of ethical literary criticism propounded by Nie Zhenzhao. Based on the author's real experiences over 10 years working as a taxi driver, *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody* is set in Japanese society in the 1970s, a period of rapid economic growth. The novel portrays the difficult and impoverished life of Zainichi and the social discrimination they suffered in Japan. *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody* well describes the way in which "a Zainichi as a being on the move" is substantialized in the space called a "taxi". He depicts the ethical world of ethnic Koreans in Japan by showing the complex relationship in which human nature and desire collide with ethical values and norms and dismantle them through the absurd value standards of the Japanese, who make moral judgments based on racial factors.

Keywords: Zainichi; Yan Sogiru; taxi; mobility; ethical literary criticism

Author: Myungsim Yang is HK Research Professor at the Academy of Mobility Humanities at Konkuk University (Seoul, Korea). Her academic interest lies in researching Zainichi (Korean residents in Japan) literature in general and the "movements" depicted in Zainichi narratives from the "mobility" perspectives in particular (Email: ms0611@konkuk.ac.kr). This work was supported by the Ministry of Education of the Republic of Korea and the National Research Foundation of Korea 【NRF-2018S1A6A3A03043497】.

标题:出租车叙事的伦理结构:以旅日作家梁石日的《出租车狂想曲》为中心 内容摘要:本文以"出租车"这一移动手段为中心,以扩张叙事的旅日朝鲜 人作家梁石日的作品《出租车狂想曲》为对象,立足于聂珍钊的文学伦理学 批评,旨在对旅日文学文本的伦理意义进行考察。朝鲜迎来解放以后,未能 回国而滞留在日本的旅日朝鲜人未能获得日本社会的承认,在生活中不停意 识到自己民族和个人认同感。当过出租车司机的作家以自己的真实经历为基 础创作的这部作品,以1970年代高速增长期的日本社会为背景,描写了旅日 朝鲜人贫困贫瘠的生活和日本社会的歧视。《出租车狂想曲》借助多个伦理

结实现了结构化,本文首先以"我"为中心,通过出租车、出租车司机、乘 客的这种机械与人类的结构性功能和人物之间的关系,考察了"出租车"这 一移动手段所蕴含的意义,还通过"我"身边的人物来考察压力之下登场人 物们的行为所具备的伦理意义。从文学伦理学批评的观点审视梁石日文学包 含的伦理选择及其价值,将突破此前的旅日文学分析框架,让我们能够从更 为普遍和全面的角度看待旅日文学。

关键词: 旅日; 梁石日; 出租车; 移动; 文学伦理学批评

作者简介:梁明心,韩国建国大学移动人文学研究院 HK 研究教授,主要研 究方向为日朝鲜人文学和"移动性"。本文为韩国教育部和韩国国家研究基 金会项目【NRF-2018S1A6A3A03043497】的阶段性成果。

#### Introduction: Yan Sogiru, the Taxi Driver

Focusing on Taxi Crazy Rhapsody (1987), a work by Zainichi writer Yan Sogiru (1936-), whose narrative unfolds around a means of transportation, the 'taxi,' this paper aims to explore the ethical significance of Zainichi literary texts by drawing on the theory of ethical literary criticism propounded by Nie Zhenzhao.

The original meaning of the Japanese word "zainichi" is simply "foreigners in Japan". But in general use, it became a derogatory term used to refer to ethnic Koreans living in Japan. Zainichi are Koreans who moved to Japan during the colonial period, when Korea was ruled by the Japanese, and who either did not or could not return to their homeland after it was liberated from Japanese colonial rule. In Japanese society, they were not recognized as full members of society. They have been forced to be constantly conscious of their national and personal identity. In analyzing the literary works of ethnic Koreans in Japan, which emerged from the complicated history between Korea and Japan and its many twists and turns, the theory of ethical literary criticism proposed by Chinese literary theorist Nie Zhenzhao, who has focused on a "fundamental reexamination of the relationship between literature and society" (J. Lee 332), can provide an effective and appropriate framework for analysis.

First published in 1981, Crazy Rhapsody was published again in 1987 as a

Yan Sogiru's parents were from Jeju Island, Korea. They moved to Osaka, Japan, and settled there. Yan Sogiru was born in 1936 in Ikaino, Osaka, the largest and oldest ethnic Korean quarter in Japan. He started a printing company at the age of 26, but the business failed and he ended up taking on a huge debt. At the age of 29, he left Osaka and began wandering around Japan. Then, in 1970, at the age of 34, he started working as a taxi driver in Tokyo. When Taxi Crazy Rhapsody, which he wrote based on his experiences working as a taxi driver, became popular, he began to transition into a full-time career as a writer. (Zainichi Korean Dictionary, Sunin, 2012. 250.)

paperback version with the revised title Taxi Crazy Rhapsody. When the novel was adapted as a film by director Sai Yoichi under the title All Under the Moon, Yan Sogiru began to capture the attention of the Japanese literary world. Based on the author's real experiences over 10 years working as a taxi driver, Taxi Crazy Rhapsody is set in Japanese society in the 1970s, a period of rapid economic growth. The novel portrays the difficult and impoverished life of Zainichi and the social discrimination they suffered in Japan. In the 1970s, Japan achieved high levels of economic growth and made tremendous progress in technology and industry, which brought about profound changes in Japanese society. On the other hand, Japanese society was faced with numerous problems, including the relative poverty of most of its people compared to the strong national economy, the gap between a developed national economy and other sectors that fell relatively behind, an unthinking indulgence in Western culture, and Japanese people's unusual love for and attachment to their own country<sup>1</sup>.

In particular, as the issue of minorities emerged in the 1970s as a problem in post-war Japanese society, discrimination in the areas of race, class, and gender became increasingly prominent. The Japanese considered themselves pure, unique and superior to other peoples. The result is that the Japanese government tried to curb the influx of foreigners as much as possible while adopting a very inhospitable policy towards outsiders. The general public also had an unfriendly attitude to foreigners, so the damage had to be borne by foreigners who did not belong to the Japanese "pure-blood" (Kim 39).

Taxi Crazy Rhapsody consists of seven parts: "Miju"( 迷走), "In Shinjuku," "Living Together," "Ancestral Rite," "Canal," "Crazy Horse I" and "Crazy Horse II". Although it resembles a collection of short stories that are independent of each other in content and composition, it can also be seen that the personal life and adversity experienced by the protagonist of each story form a continuum like a series, eventually building a single whole.<sup>2</sup>

The novel can be divided into two main narratives: one is the taxi narrative centered on the narrator who is a taxi driver; the other is a narrative of surrounding characters that consists of episodes with the taxi company, taxi passengers, Japanese colleagues, and Zainichi friends who appear on the narrator's travels.

Nie Zhenzhao explained that the purpose of ethical literary criticism is "to discover the ethical values that exist objectively in literature through ethical

See Yung-myung Kim, Poverty in Japan, Seoul: Miraesa, 1994.

See Yeounsuk Lee, "From Nihility to Dreams: About Taxi Crazy Rhapsody," Poetry and Criticism: Eureka 32 (15), 2000 (12): 93.

interpretation, and to reveal the truth of life and facts portrayed by literary works" (Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory and Terminology" 79).

From the perspective of ethical literary criticism, the ethical consciousness of humankind emerged as reason matured, and the essential characteristic that distinguishes the human species from animals is the fact that the human species has reason, and the core of reason is ethical consciousness (Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory and Terminology" 70-71).

Of the critical terms devised by Nie Zhenzhao, the one most frequently used is 'ethical structure', which refers to the structure of a text composed by the thoughts and activities of characters in the text. There are two basic axes that form an ethical structure: ethical line and ethical knot. An ethical line refers to one or multiple ethical structures that penetrate ethical knots, and ethical knots mean ethical contradictions and conflicts that complete the structure of a literary text by being penetrated or connected by ethical lines.<sup>1</sup>

Each story in *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody* is structured with several ethical knots. This paper will examine the meaning of the "taxi" as a means of transportation by examining the complex fabric of the structural functions of the machine (taxi) and human beings (taxi driver and passengers), and the relationship between the characters, centered on the narrator. And, drawing on Nie Zhenzhao's theory of ethical literary criticism, this paper analyzes how the discriminatory behavior revealed through the narrative of the people around the narrator and the distorted behavior of the characters resisting discrimination are structured with ethical knots. Through this, the study seeks to explore the ethical significance of the actions of characters in the literary text. By illuminating the ethical choices and their values implied in Yan Sogiru's literary work from the perspective of literary ethics, we will be able to look at the literature of Zainichi from a more universal and comprehensive perspective, going beyond the conventional framework of analysis of Zainichi literature, which has focused on the limited topics of the history of Koreans living in Japan amid poverty and discrimination, their national identity as Koreans or their personal identity.

#### Taxi-Based Narrative Seen through the Relationship between Taxi, Taxi Driver, and Passengers

As we can see from the use of the means of transportation called a "taxi" in the title, this novel is not simply a work of a Zainichi writer, but the story of a "taxi driver":

See Jinhyoung Lee, "Popular Narrative and the 'Ethical Turn' in Literature," Journal of Popular Narrative 22.2 (2016): 343-344.

No one would ever think of a career as a taxi driver, which is a job of such low social standing that even money lenders would be reluctant to trade with one. Every driver considers it as a temporary measure to earn needed money. They hope to change to another job if given the opportunity. But as time goes by, and one year of driving becomes two, and then three and then five, the opportunity to change jobs becomes slim. In typical companies salary increases according to seniority, which guarantees a certain degree of stability in the lives of employees, but the opposite is the case for taxi drivers. When you are young, you can make more money by relying on your physical stamina, but as the years go by, the number of your dependents increases, while your physical strength declines; this means that your ability to work decreases and your income dwindles to the point where you have to struggle to make ends meet. Moreover, despite facing death every day, nothing is guaranteed. Of course, I also became a taxi driver as a temporary measure. But as a Zainichi who is not guaranteed anything in this country, being a taxi driver might actually be the best fit for me. (Yan, "Miju" 16)<sup>1</sup>

Among the seven short stories collected in *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody*, the first one titled "Miju" deals with the daily lives of taxi drivers, who work under poor conditions which force them to struggle every minute and second to achieve the "norm" (standard amount of labor), as well as the absurd reality faced by taxi companies, by showing a cross-section of the overnight travel route of the narrator, an ethnic Korean taxi driver in Japan. The story begins with a scene in which Nakanishi, unable to relax even for a moment to feed his family, gets up first, picks up the narrator, and then drives off to pick up Uchida, who is sleeping with an oil stove on in a room of the size of four and a half tatami mats in an old wooden building. In contrast to the "woman in a red Mercedes-Benz sports car unnecessarily tooting her horn" (Yan, "Miju" 9) in a scene describing his journey to work, Nakanishi gets a traffic ticket while trying to evade a traffic jam so as not to be late—the worst way to go to work. In this way, the novel begins with several devices that allow the reader to guess the status of the taxi driver, and the poverty of his environment.

The aftermath of the high economic growth of Japanese society at that time also affected Zainichi. The economic disparity is clearly visible when looking at the rates of college education that are associated with improved living standards.

<sup>1</sup> The text is based on Yan Sogiru's *Taxi Crazy Rhapsody* (Tokyo: Chikumabunko, 1987), but the quotation is from *All Under the Moon* (*Taxi Crazy Rhapsody*) (Ingangwayesulsa, 1994).

There was a significant difference between the Japanese and Zainichi in terms of the improvement of their living conditions during this period of high economic growth. This trend related to the living standards of Zainichi involved deep-seated racial discrimination. Both government agencies and private companies would rarely hire non-Japanese employees, and it was even more difficult for Zainichi to find stable jobs (Tonomura 496-499).

According to Urry in the *Mobility*, the concept of "mobilities" refers to "various kinds of movement of people, or ideas, or information or objects" and "a wide array of economic, social and political practices, infrastructures and ideologies that all involve, entail or curtail" such movements (18).

Urry is more interested in the automotive mobility system than any other. He sees the car-driver as a machine-human hybrid, explaining that the car is combined with the driver's body and emotions, which changes their identity and subjectivity (H. Lee 28). Urry said that the car system provided a way to transcending a public timetable by enabling car-drivers to develop their own timetabling of social life. And it also created "a wide array of other spaces beyond the railway carriage and the station" (112).

A "taxi" is different from other means of public transportation in that it is one of the means of public transportation such as railroad or train, and at the same time has the functions of the automotive system. And while taxis share the functions of the automotive system, ethical relationships between various people are formed by the combination not only of the car and the driver, but also of the passengers:

I will continue to run through the streets like a gypsy. My destination depends on the passengers. I go anywhere the customer demands. I eat soba when I am hungry, and when I want to sleep, I pull my car over by the roadside and sleep. There is neither Lunar New Year nor Chuseok for taxi drivers. There is only the meridian of yesterday and today. There is only the endless conflict between the body and the mind. Over there where the headlight illuminates, I see the entrance to hell with its jaws wide open. I rush through the nadir, where life and death have their backs to each other. During these four years, I traveled back and forth the distance between the Earth and the Moon. Riding on the acceleration of time, I am passing time at twice the speed of other humans, because two days have passed after a day's labor is over. (Yan, "Crazy Horse 2" 207)

The above quotation well describes the poor working conditions of taxi drivers, and the relationship and structural characteristics of taxis, taxi drivers, and passengers.

In contrast to buses and trains, which operate according to fixed public timetables, taxis have an individual and flexible system of operation. From the passenger's point of view, a taxi has the advantage that the passenger can freely set the time and space, and can freely decide the destination and change the route in the middle. For the taxi driver, the taxi is a means of livelihood and at the same time a personal haven that allows them to go anywhere they need to, and also to park and take a rest. But in reality, the body of the taxi driver is always exposed to the risk of accidents because he is in a condition of "working by cheating the body while fighting overwork and unbearable drowsiness" (Yan, "Miju" 20). The reality of taxi drivers, whose operating hours, miles driven, and income have a proportional relationship, is that even when they are at rest, they must constantly be mentally calculating their mileage as they think about the amount of work they have done that day.

Further, taxi drivers are bound to interact with passengers, and at such a moment, the mobile space of the taxi becomes a place of social exchange between drivers and passengers. In a taxi that functions as a place for consumption of emotions, the driver can establish close social relationships with passengers, or conversely, can face conflicts and collisions.

The story "Miju" depicts episodes involving the narrator and various passengers on the night of Christmas Eve. Late at night, four drunken male passengers flatter the ego of their department head, who is in a good mood. But when he gets out, the remaining three men all attack the boss for his indecisiveness. Then, the last man suddenly leans forward from the back seat and shouts a request, almost threateningly, to the driver (the narrator), asking him to find a woman for him. Some passengers show an interest in the narrator's taxi license. A person in the front passenger seat is intrigued when he sees the name "Yan" on the narrator's taxi license, asking an odd question, "That's a rare name. How do you read it? Are you Chinese?" Hearing the driver answer "I am Korean" (Yan, "Miju" 37-38), the passenger is embarrassed and abruptly ends the discussion, amplifying the tension as if he had learned of the criminal record of an ex-convict. Furthermore, the driver's status as a Zainichi provides cover for unethical behavior by some taxi passengers, with some taking advantage of his relatively low status to evade the fare. One drunken passenger who tried to avoid paying went to the police station, and as if playing his trump card at the decisive moment, discloses: "This guy is a Josenjing" (Yan, "Miju" 41). "Josenjing" means derogatory word for ethnic Koreans in Japan.

In a taxi that serves as a place of emotional consumption, drunken passengers sometimes complain of their lot to the driver, while some gossip about co-workers in one voice with their colleagues on board. And some passengers are curious about the taxi driver's private life, generating an ethical structure within the mobile space of a taxi.

In this way, the emotional exchange that takes place within the taxi sometimes makes the driver sitting inside his vehicle composed of mobile mechanical devices feel safe, comfortable, and free, and at other times it can make him feel uncomfortable, when he must work through feelings of suppression and restraint (H. Lee 27).

What is important is that a taxi driver cannot be an independent subject, either inside or outside the taxi. He is the one at the wheel who moves the vehicle, but the destination is determined by the passenger seated in the back.

Ironically, the taxi and its driver, which have such a symbolic significance as examples of the minority, run through downtown Tokyo, which is the heart of Japan and a center where social luminaries gather. Taxi Crazy Rhapsody shows the reality of Japanese society through the contrasting scenery of day and night of downtown Tokyo, and the conflicts and clashes between the driver and passengers with diverse personalities, while portraying the stratified discrimination based on racial and class differences epitomized by the Zainichi taxi driver.

The job of a taxi driver, formed through the author's actual experiences, best embodies the Zainichi as a being on the move while at the same time showing the reality of a job in which humans are treated like a subhuman adjunct attached to a machine. While navigating all over the city, the taxi driver has a symbolic significance as an occupation that allows one to experience the mainstream society of Japan, which is the main agent of discrimination. Through the perspective of a taxi driver, this novel shows the day and night scenery of downtown Tokyo, through which the taxi is navigating, and the behavior of passengers observed through the rear-view mirror in a narrow space called a taxi. By symbolically revealing the complex relationship between machines and humans, ethical values and norms, human nature and desires, the work awakens the reader to the ethics that exist in the background of the times and the society, and provides an opportunity to reflect on ethical values.

#### Elimination of Ideology, Ethical Structure of Zainichi Narrative

Taxi Crazy Rhapsody features various characters who constitute a conflict structure, such as the first-person narrator of the taxi driver, passengers from various walks of life, office workers and executives, and hometown friends of the narrator.

The seven short stories in the novel form a complex conflict structure that leads

to collisions of ethical values: the taxi company giving a notice of dismissal with no reason; the police officer who treats the protagonist like a criminal because he is not carrying his alien registration card; the drunken passenger trying to cunningly take advantage of the fact that the taxi driver is Korean; the attitude of Hosokawa, who suddenly turns aggressive when he finds out the narrator is a Korean, advising him to cover it up. In the process of resolving conflicts, the stories show the problem of the ethical choices that must be made by the protagonists who 'resist' the violence in Japanese society.

"In Shinjuku", the second story in Taxi Crazy Rhapsody, depicts an episode involving Han Seong-hyeong, a friend of the protagonist who is from Jeju Island in Korea and runs a financial business. While drinking at a bar, the two men get into a brawl with right-wing students and are taken to the police station. During the investigation, the pair are treated as criminals because they are not carrying their alien registration cards. Enraged at the reality that Zainichi themselves are considered criminal suspects, Han Seong-hyeong starts to behave in a bizarre manner, defecating in his pants and smearing feces all over his body and the desks of the police officers.

"Living Together" is a story of the protagonist who is fired from his taxi company and starts living at the home of his Japanese friend, Hosokawa. At Hosokawa's recommendation, the narrator brings his resume and goes to Hosokawa's taxi company for a job interview. There, for the first time, Hosokawa learns that the narrator (Mr. Yana) is Korean. The narrator hears Hosokawa say, "I like you, Mr. Yana, but I hate Josenjing" (77). Hosokawa's comments that Koreans are cunning, filthy, and uncultured confirm the deep-seated discrimination among the Japanese people against ethnic Koreans.

"Canal" is a story of the narrator who receives a telegram from his cousin and then visits Ikaino<sup>1</sup>, Osaka for the first time in the 10 years since he has left his hometown. The story revolves around Yoo Young-shim, who gets drunk and jumps into a canal, and the protagonist's memories and recollections of his violent, monster-like father.

In "Crazy Horse I," the narrator, tired of taxi driving, takes a job as a longdistance transport driver when he hears that he will be guaranteed 200,000 yen a month. But realizing that the job is far from what he expected, he is again introduced to a small taxi company on the outskirts and changes his job once again. There, he reunites with Isamu-Ito, an elementary school classmate who works as

Ikaino is an old name for Ikaino-cho, Ikuno-ku, Osaka City in which the largest and oldest Zainichi residential area. (Zainichi Korean Dictionary, Sunin, 2012. 304.)

a taxi driver there. Isamu has become a weak and helpless man, and is eventually admitted to a mental hospital.

In "Crazy Horse II", the taxi company the narrator works for goes bankrupt, as it was made up of drivers who were addicted to gambling and executives who were indifferent to management. After a few days off, the narrator comes back to work and witnesses a fire that appears to be arson and thinks of the old man at the vehicle maintenance department who said, "I will take care of myself" (206). He suspects that the old man may have burned himself to death. But the story ends with the sight of the old man running past the narrator, away from the flames.

Each short story in Taxi Crazy Rhapsody involves several ethical knots. And in the process by which the characters dismantle the conflict structure between them, they force themselves to make ethical choices. Based on Darwin's theory of evolution, Nie Zhenzhao defines humans as beings formed by ethical choices. He believes that there is a 'sphinx factor' that consists of two parts: the human factor and the animal factor; since the human factor in general is superior to the animal factor, the former can control the latter. He adds that this explains why humans can become ethically conscious beings.

The act of defecating in one's own pants and smearing feces on the desks of the policemen, and the impulsive act of Yoo Young-shim, who, frustrated with life, jumps into the canal, ridicules the rescuers, and ends up being arrested: both are expressions of an unethical will to break free from moral restraint. From the standpoint of the police, Zainichi are deviants who do not follow the rules and disturb the social order. The deviant behavior of Han Seong-hyeong and Yoo Youngshim can be seen as a form of self-verification through aberration as well as a sign of resistance against the injustice of the police automatically treating Zainichi as criminals without touching the heart of the matter.

Based on the theory of Nie Zhenzhao, the bizarre behavior of Han Seonghyeong and Yoo Young-shim who resist the Japanese value standard that makes moral judgment based on racial factors, show that they are aware of ethics (the human factor) through the unethical symbols (the animal factor), and that it is important to make ethical choices through rational will. In the conflict between the human factor and the animal factor inherent in human nature, Zainichi writer Yan Sogiru portrays the process of overcoming the conflict by revealing the animal factor.

Through the memories of Ikaino, "Canal" depicts the ethical conflict surrounding the existence of the 'father,' which symbolizes the unresolved

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism," Arcadia 50.1 (2015): 96.

animalized body within the narrator:

I was in a fixed upright position for hours. I was like a desperate prisoner who endured long and painful torture in a closed room, awaiting death. My father, who was sleeping with his back facing this side and his upper body naked, seemed like a mysterious monster. Vivid wounds caused by teeth, chains, edge tools, and hooks lodged in those hard muscles. A sword-cut like snake tattoo from the shoulder to the tailbone. (Yan, "Canal,"137)

As evidenced by the above description of the father, the deep-seated feelings of resentment and hatred for the father become a key conflict factor that brings ethical confusion to the narrator, who has grown up hearing, "Koreans are the people in the world that respect blood ties the most. Respect for parents, love for brothers, and respect for good manners toward neighbors are the moral principle of Koreans" (Yan, "Canal" 117).

The protagonist constantly summons the animal factor which wants to deny his father and forces himself to make an ethical choice because his father is a person who destroyed the family order and became the main cause of the collapse of a Korean Zainichi family. The narrator's irrational wish to deny the existence of his father was an expression of resistance to the violent behavior of his father who betrayed family ethics as a father and husband, which the narrator experienced as a child.

A Zainichi, living in the turbulent period of the 1970s, had no choice but to live a life subordinated to society, and the incomprehensible reality of discrimination constantly evokes the animal factor inherent in human beings. This is a device Yan Sogiru uses to represent the gloomy side of Japan in the heyday of its economic growth, by summoning the animal factor, while at the same time to awaken a new awareness of the human factor through awareness of the animal factor.

Taxi Crazy Rhapsody is a work that well reveals the importance of ethical choice through the rational will by becoming aware of ethics (the human factor) by means of unethical symbols (the animal factor) and practicing resistance to escape from the unethical nature of the violence of imperialism and discrimination rampant in Japanese society.

#### Conclusion

Drawing on the theory of ethical literary criticism, this paper has discussed Yan Sogiru's Taxi Crazy Rhapsody focusing on the symbolic significance of the taxi, a means of transportation, and the existence of Zainichi, as well as the relationship between ethical knots in the narrative, which is synchronically forming the Zainichi society in Japan.

A taxi driver must always be ready to look in different directions. Even if he is looking ahead, he should always keep an eye on vehicles coming from behind and passengers in the rearview mirror. Koji Hayashi evaluated that Yan Sogiru's literature "is always looking up at the back yard of Japanese society from the bottom, and depicts the pretentiousness of modern Japan covered up by decoration, as if peeling it off layer by layer" (180).

As Hayashi's evaluation confirms, Yan Sogiru, who was conscious of the multiple gazes a taxi driver must adopt simultaneously, looked in the rear-view mirror to see the government office quarters of downtown Tokyo in the middle of the day, the night landscape crowded with faces as masks, the appearance and behavior of various passengers. Through this, he realistically depicts the huge gap between the façade of Japan during its period of rapid economic growth in the 1970s and the Japanese society and people reflected in the rearview mirror. Taxi Crazy Rhapsody well describes the way in which 'a Zainichi as a being on the move' is substantialized in the space called a 'taxi'. He depicts the ethical world of ethnic Koreans in Japan by showing the complex relationship in which human nature and desire collide with ethical values and norms and dismantle them through the absurd value standards of the Japanese, who make moral judgments based on racial factors.

The characters in the novel constantly experience the process of ethical conflict and choice with others or with themselves due to the racial discrimination, conflict, and antagonism of values experienced by Zainichi as an ethnic minority, and the social reality faced by the protagonists constantly stimulates the animal factor that is latent in the characters.

The purpose of ethical literary criticism is not merely to make a simple value judgment on literature as good or bad from an ethical standpoint, but to discover the ethical values that exist objectively in literature through ethical interpretation, and to reveal the truth of life and facts depicted in literary works.<sup>2</sup>

The author's intent seems to be to show how Zainichi are valued through the ethical choices of the protagonists, and at the same time, to critically express the absurd system of Japanese society through the depiction of unethical behavior of its

In her article, "Migratory Aesthetics in Diasporic Claustrophobia," Maria Luisa Torres Reyes explored "Filipino domestic workers" as beings on the move, which, for example, is substantialized in "the Italian tour bus" (51-53).

Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory and Terminology," International Journal of Diaspora & Cultural Criticism 5.1 (2015): 79.

people, and to emphasize the importance of the human factor and its ethical value through awareness of the animal factor.

Yan Sogiru has realistically portrayed even the ugliness of Zainichi society and criticized the fact that the lives of Zainichi were not properly portrayed in the literary works of the first generation of Zainichi writers, who were preoccupied with issues like ethnicity, politics, and ideology. For this reason, it is considered that he consciously eliminated ideological elements such as loyalty, sympathy, ethnicity, and morality in his work, to instead depict naked human nature in a violent world that cannot be dealt with within the framework of ethnicity or ideology, with a unique style that is filled with tension (Yan, et al. 210).

The first generation of Zainichi immigrated to Japan from the Korean Peninsula, and while living in Japanese society, remained attached to their homeland and hometowns, and tried not to lose their sense of place. Their precarious way of life itself was something that they regarded as a long nightmare, and they dreamed of returning to their homeland, both spatially and temporally. However, the main character in Yan Sogiru's work left his hometown, where he was born, to earn a livelihood, heading for a new world. He has no sentiment of nostalgia or attachment to his hometown or to his family (his father). It is at this point that Yan Sogiru's literary work appears to be trying to transform the Zainichi narrative by creating a crack in the sentiment of attachment to the ethnic group, country, and hometown represented in conventional Zainichi literary texts.

#### **Works Cited**

Hayashi, Koji. Zainichi Korean Japanese Literature Theory. Tokyo: Shinkansya, 1991.

Kim, Yung-myung. Poverty in Japan. Seoul: Miraesa, 1994.

Lee, Heesang. John Urry, Mobility. Seoul: Communication Books, 2016.

Lee, Jinhyoung. "Popular Narrative and the 'Ethical Turn' in Literature." Journal of Popular Narrative 22.2 (2016): 329-356.

Lee, Yeounsuk. "From Nihility to Dreams: About Taxi Crazy Rhapsody." Poetry and Criticism: Eureka 12 (2000): 86-93.

Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory and Terminology." International Journal of Diaspora & Cultural Criticism 5.1 (2015): 58-80.

—. "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism." Arcadia 50.1 (2015): 83-101.

Park, Iru, et al. Zainichi Korean Dictionary, translated by Chong Heeson, et al. Seoul: Sunin, 2012.

Reyes, Maria Luisa Torres. "Migratory Aesthetics in Diasporic Claustrophobia." Mobility Humanities 1.2 (2022): 41-61.

Tonomura, Masaru. A Historical Study of Korean Society in Japan, translated by Kim Induck and Shin

Yuwon. Seoul: Nonhyung, 2010.

Urry, John. Mobility. Cambridge: Polity, 2007.

Yan, Sogiru. All Under the Moon (Taxi Crazy Rhapsody), translated by Paek Taehee. Seoul: Ingangwayesulsa, 1994.

Yan, Sogiru. et al. *Korean-Japanese writer, short storyline*, translated by Lee Hanchang. Seoul: Sohwa, 1996.

# Reading Park Kyung-ni's *Kim's Daughters* from the Perspective of Ethical Literary Criticism: Focusing on Ethical Representation and Ethical Knots of "Otherized Subjects"

#### **Soyoung Kim**

Abstract: Park Kyung-ni was a Korean novelist who gained international fame with her epic novel *The Earth*. She mainly focused on the lives of an unhappy women in her literary works. This study investigates the multi-layered narrative of a family's tragic fate and unstable social system in Kim's Daughters. While Kim's Daughters opens with a shocking death, one should not solely focus on the superficial layer of this death. This is because, in the novel, the unethical incidents and political affairs that lead to death do not originate from a single relationship between the subject and the other, but rather represent otherized subjects in family histories and historical time. The ethical texts embedded in Kim's Daughters are appropriate to read through the lens of ethical literary criticism, which dissects each ethical choice model and analyzes the motivations and processes thereof. This study explores the (non-) ethical behavior and internal chaos of the characters in *Kim's Daughters*, and analyzes the intertextuality reflected in the specific modern Korean history and location. This study presents a new research methodology for reading the worldview of Park Kyung-ni by deconstructing the ethical problem and examining the ethical knots in the novel. Furthermore, by applying sub-concepts such as ethical standards, ethical environment, ethical selection, ethical enlightenment, ethical taboo, and ethical dilemma, this study illuminates the ethical issues that change between life and death and are inherent in the subjects or specific events of the novel.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; Park Kyung-ni; *Kim's Daughters*; ethical representation; ethical knots; otherized subject

**Author: Soyoung Kim** is Academic Research Professor at Hankuk University of Foreign Studies (Seoul, Korea). She specializes in many genres of art, including literature, film, theater, and fine art. She has served as the performance director of the Brecht Society of Korea and the academic director of the Global Cultural Contents Association and the Korean Film Society (E-mail: ssoyoung710@naver.com).

标题:从文学伦理学批评视角解读朴景利的《金药局家的女儿们》:他者化 主体的伦理表征与伦理结

内容摘要: 凭史诗小说《土地》蜚声国际的韩国小说家朴景利, 向来关注女性 的生存困境,《金药局家的女儿们》也不例外。在该作品中,作者通过多层次 的叙事结构、描绘了一个家庭的悲惨命运和动荡的社会环境。尽管《金药局家 的女儿们》以震撼人心的死亡为开场,我们却不应只关注这种死亡的表层含 义。因为在作品中导致死亡的不道德事件和政治事件的并非起源于主体与他者 的单一关系,而是代表了家族史和历史中的他者化的主体。《金药局家的女儿 们》中的伦理文本非常适合运用文学伦理学批评理论来解读, 因为它剖析了各 个伦理选择模型并分析其动机及过程。本文旨在探讨《金药局家的女儿们》中 人物的(非)伦理行为及内部混乱,对现代韩国特定历史时期及场所的互文性展 开分析。通过解构小说中的伦理问题及审视其中的伦理结,提出解读朴景利世 界观的新研究方法。此外,本文还通过"伦理准则"、"伦理环境"、"伦理 选择"、"伦理启蒙"、"伦理禁忌"和"伦理困境"等概念,阐明变化于生 死之间的、存在于小说主题及特定事件之中的伦理问题。

关键词: 文学伦理学批评; 朴景利;《金药局家的女儿们》; 伦理表征; 伦理结; 他者化主体

作者简介:金昭英,韩国外国语大学学术研究教授,主要从事文学、电影、 戏剧和美术等领域研究,目前担任韩国布莱希特协会表演总监、全球文化创 意学会学术总监及韩国电影协会学术总监。

#### 1. Encounter between Park Kyung-ni's Novel and Ethical Literary Criticism

Park Kyung-ni (1926-2008), a Korean novelist who gained international fame with her epic novel, The Earth (1994), has mainly focused on the lives of unhappy women since her early short stories to the later long novels. In particular, the multilayered narrative of a family's tragic fate and unstable social system in Kim's Daughters (1962), emerged in her novel, The Earth, resulting in a huge worldview synthesis. The Earth was written over a 26-year period from 1969 and deals with the family history of Choi Champan (vice minister) who lived during the late Joseon Dynasty rule and Japanese colonial period. This novel depicts the universal will of human beings embodied by Seo-hee, the only daughter of the Choi family, amid modern Korean history, including the Donghak Peasant Revolution, Eulsa Treaty, Sino-Japanese War, Gando Convention, and Manchurian Incident. This method of linking significant historical events and individual fates is similar to the layered narrative structure used in films by fifth generation Chinese directors or Taiwanese new wave cinema.

Similar to *The Earth*, *Kim's Daughters* opens with a shocking incident that results in death. It is clear that death intertwined with immorality is a dynamic motif that develops throughout this novel. Park Kyung-ni has said, "There is a lot of death in my works. Death in the works is usually the end to highlight life" (Park 141-143). It should be noted that one should not solely focus on these superficial layers of death. This is because, in the novel, the unethical events or political affairs that lead to death do not originate from a single relationship between the subject and the other, but rather form a part of the family histories intertwined with the historical background. Furthermore, the literary value of Kim's Daughters is that the downfall of a family caused by social change, as well as the fate of the characters, do not end in tragedy. Rather, the narrative moves forward due to the open dynamism of an irresistible succession of misfortunes driven by one character.<sup>1</sup>

Various ethical texts inherent in the multi-layered narrative of *Kim's Daughters* are suitable for being read through the lens of "ethical literary criticism." Ethical literary criticism was proposed by Nie Zhenzhao to compensate for the limitations of ethical criticism proposed by Western literary critics. It is a critical approach that examines the different phenomena of life described in literary texts, namely, "Human-Self-Other-Society." This theory dissects each ethical selection model placed in a specific historical environment as complex ethical relationships, such as "nature", and analyzes the motives and processes of the ethical selection. The ultimate goal of such critical methods is to provide experiences and lessons for the advancement of human civilization by revealing the moral inspiration behind literary works and providing effective moral examples.<sup>2</sup>

As such, what ethical literary criticism seeks as a critical theory aligns with the purpose of this article that analyzes the (non-) ethical behavior and internal chaos of the characters in Kim's Daughters, as well as the intertextuality reflected in the specificity of modern Korean history and the location, Tongyeong. This is further linked to the author's intention to reveal, through ethical issues, the fateful relationships between the subject and other, human and nature, and individual and group. The main ethical texts of Kim's Daughters are as follows: a (non-) ethical layered narrative linked with complex events; the ethicality shown in the selective behavior of many characters; and the future ethical possibility presented by sharing human unhappiness directly in relation to modern history. This study presents a new research methodology for understanding the worldview of writer Park Kyung-

See Hye-kyung Lee, "A Study on the Tragic Worldview Appeared in Park Kyung-ni's Novel-Focusing on Kim's Daughters," Korean Language 84 (2020): 405.

See Nie Zhenzhao, Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.

ni by deconstructing the ethical problems presented in Kim's Daughters through the lens of ethical literary criticism. Furthermore, this article can contribute toward solidifying and expanding the status of ethical literary criticism as an independent critical discourse.

#### 2. The Ethical Literary Criticism and Ethical Structures of Literary Texts

The emergence of literary criticism that emphasized ethical morals occurred in the 1960s in the United States. The first theory was called ethical criticism and was represented by Wayne Clayson Booth. It was mainly concerned with the ideologies presented in the work and their effects on the reader. However, by the end of the 20th century, the value and moral content of literary works were seen as irrelevant, and the popularity of ethical criticism gradually began to decline. Meanwhile, in China, the popular literary criticism at that time showed a lack of ethics in form, literature, gender, and environment. This approach moved literary criticism away from the literary work and did not regard the literary text as important, except to prove critics' specific propositions. As a result, ethical literary criticism was born as part of the argument that the ethics and norms of the literary world should be kept as a strict criticism rather than an object of material desire.

Under the above-mentioned circumstances, since 2005, ethical criticism has been a major literary approach among Chinses academics under the name of literary ethical criticism. Ethical literary criticism is a critical theory that reads, analyzes, and interprets the ethical characteristics and functions of literary works from an ethical viewpoint. Ethical literary criticism regards a literary work as a product of morality, that is, it treats literature is an ethical expression of a particular historical context. This theory further states that literature is not only the art of language, but also the art of texts, and a unique mode of expressing ethics and morals. Essentially, literature is the art of ethics in which human beings invent the letter symbols to record their understanding of life and ethics, freeing themselves from the demands of ethical expression which gave rise to the first types of literature.<sup>2</sup>

Lim Dae Geun, who has discussed the academic value of the "Chinese School" of ethical literary criticism, considered the relationship between ethical literary criticism and literary ethics as follows. Ethical literary criticism is included in literary ethics, however, the former plays a key role in shaping and enriching the latter discourse. She states, "Literary ethics deals with issues in the literary field

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 17-25.

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory," Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-190.

such as creation, reading, criticism, literary education, and literary awards from an academic standpoint, but ethical literary criticism is mainly interested in reading comprehension of literary texts" (Lim 194). Therefore, ethical literary criticism is a discourse that guides the ethical standards that human subjects in the social context cannot overcome and the ethical environment surrounding them, as well as brings the problem of ethical choice into the academic field.1

Nie Zhenzhao, took the lead in establishing the Chinese School of ethical literary criticism and revealed the ultimate goal of the critical discourse as follows:

- 1. Chinese ethical literary criticism aims to effectively solve specific literary problems by converting literary ethics into literary ethical criticism methodology.
- 2. Chinese ethical literary criticism regards the didactic function of literature as the basic function of literature, and theoretically establishes its own position in ethical literary criticism.
- 3. The concept of ethical criticism in China was replaced with the concept of ethical literary criticism which was distinguished from moral criticism. This therefore solved the problem of literary criticism and the dissolution of history by changing ethical literary criticism from subjective moral criticism to objective criticism.
- 4. Chinese literary and ethical criticism has its own analyses including ethical environment, ethical order, ethical confusion, ethical dilemma, ethical taboo, and ethical selection. By establishing the terminology and discourse system, ethical literary criticism can become a tool that can easily dominate literary criticism.2

According to Nie Zhenzhao, literature is a distinctive expression of ethics and morals made in a particular historical period, with moral education as its main function. Therefore, the goal of ethical literary criticism is to unravel the ethical characteristics of literary works, describe the characters and their lives from an ethical viewpoint, and make ethical judgments about them. Additionally, by deciding between natural and ethical selection, it attempts to uncover the fundamental differences between humans and nature. He adds that while natural

See Dae Geun Lim, "The Academic Value of 'Chinese School' Ethical Literary Criticism," Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 2 (2021): 194-203.

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 8-9.

selection allowed humans to physically evolve from apes, ethical selection is what separates humans spiritually from animals.<sup>1</sup>

Nie Zhenzhao also places distinct emphasis on the ethical structure present within literary texts. An ethical structure identical to the ethical line creates a complete text where various ethical knots are connected by the ethical structure (ethical line) within the literary text. Therefore, while reading literary texts, ethical literary criticism emphasizes discovering or resolving ethical knots formed on the ethical line. This layered process of forming and dismantling ethical knots allows us to understand literary texts in various ways.<sup>2</sup>

Ethical structure is a textual arrangement constructed in the context of a person's thoughts and behaviors within the text. It consists of four structures: "personal relationship", "thinking activity (consciousness structure and expression structure)", "behavior", and "norm". Character relationships are a tool to store various ethical conflicts between characters, and thought activity refers to a character's logical thinking process, including the formation and development of emotions, logical judgment and reasoning, and the formation of will. Norm refers to an ethics of thought and behavior, without which an ethical structure of thought and behavior cannot be formed. Therefore, character relationships, thought activities, behaviors, and norms do not exist independently, but rather form an overall complex ethical structure through mutual cross desire.<sup>3</sup>

The ethical knot refers to the intensive embodiment of contradictions and conflicts in the structure of a literary work. The ethical knot constitutes an ethical plight and shows the basic ethical issues of literary texts. In normal circumstances, the ethical knot belongs to the horizontal structure of the literary text. Only when the ethical knot of a literary text is combined with the ethical line, can it constitute the ethical structure of narrative among literary works. Ethical knots in literary texts are related and linked together by ethical lines, and constitute the complete ethical structure of the text. (Nie 525)

Here, the ethical line refers to the linear structure of a literary text which generally belongs to the vertical structure of the text. The ethical line creates a complex ethical structure by stitching together one or more ethical knots in the literary

See Nie Zhenzhao and Shang Biwu, "Ethical Literary Criticism: East and West," Arcadia 1 (2015): 7.

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 46.

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 519-520.

text. In any work, the problems of the leading ethical line, big or small, many or few, are intricately intertwined with each other and enrich the structure. These characteristics determine the length of the ethical line of a literary work and the degree of subordination of quantity. Therefore, at first glance, the line of ethics can be perceived to be a concept similar to the plot because the central plot of a literary work is connected to the leading ethical line, and the multi-layered plots connected to the central plot are in contact with the secondary ethical line. However, the ethical line differs from the plot in that it is directly related to the issue of ethics emphasized by ethical literary criticism.<sup>2</sup>

Therefore, the complexity of a literary text is determined by the number of ethical knots constituting the ethical line and the difficulty of solving them. Furthermore, different ethical knots can have an inherent logical relationship between them and exist independently. Therefore, the task of ethical literary criticism is to interpret the fragmented ethical knots within the literary text. This is because the process of deriving specific ethical knots and advancing them to the ethical line and ethical structure is the task of reading and interpreting a literary work under ethical literary criticism. In other words, its goal is to understand the interaction of the relational networks of culture, history, and society, and prove that literature is the most vivid expression of real life and contains the general breath of an era.

This article analyzes the ethical issues in *Kim's Daughters* from the perspective of ethical literary criticism by deriving a plurality of ethical knots from the characters and events. For this purpose, the following section sets Kim Yak-guk, his wife Han-sil daek (Mrs. Han-sil), and their five daughters as "otherized subjects" and examines their ethical representations. Thereafter, we will derive an ethical structure formed from the relationships they have with others around them.

#### 3. Representation and Ethical Knots of "Otherized Subjects" in Kim's Daughters

#### 3.1 Ethical representation of otherized subjects

The characters Park Kyung-ni creates in Kim's Daughters are otherized subjects who have deviated from social ideology in the face of adversity in Korean modern history. Here, the otherized subject means a person who cannot act according to his or her will due to their surrounding people and circumstances but is gradually being

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 525-526.

See Hue Hoang Thi & Nguyen Nguyen Hoang, "Traditional Culture in Contemporary Vietnamese Poetry: A Perspective from Nie Zhenzhao's Ethical Literary Criticism", Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2020): 55.

othered and alienated from the central narrative. Kim Yak-guk and his daughters, referred to in the novel's title, are portrayed as independent figures of the middle class in Tongyeong city who go through an ethical structure of complicated ethical knots and face a miserable fate. In the first half of the novel, they insist on breaking bonds with others; however, in the second half, they discover new values to form reality through the relativization or diversification of others. Therefore, in this section, I will examine the ethical representation of subjects who are otherized in connection with ethical issues. Subsequently, in the next section, the ethical issues of otherized subjects will be analyzed using ethical knots and the ethical structure.

The character to consider is Kim Yak-guk's wife, Han-sil daek, who is not mentioned in the title of the novel. Han-sil daek, named Takbunshi, is the daughter of the wealthy Taksi and is located at the center of the novel. Nevertheless, Hansil daek is most clearly otherized in her intertwined relationships with Kim Yakguk, her five daughters, and the people around her. She comes across as a shadow of others and dies a tragic death for the sake of others. Han-sil daek is presented as a sacrificial figure devoted to her husband and children and is the universal representation of Korean women living in modern society. In the ethical structure of character relationships comprising numerous ethical knots, she only exists as an otherized subject who takes care of others. If we compare Kim Yak-guk's family to a single tree, it can be said that Han-sil daek is presented as an intermediary entity that connects the roots and branches.

Next, Kim Yak-guk is the son of Kim Bong-je's younger brother Kim Bongryong, who ran a pharmacy in Tongyeong, and his real name is Kim Seong-soo. He is portrayed throughout the novel as a lonely stranger due to the early death of his parents, despite having a wife and daughters. Later, Ki-doo, who is married to his fourth daughter Yong-ok, takes over the fishing grounds and ships, but when their newly purchased fishing boat sinks, the Kim Yak-guk family's influence sharply declines. Subsequently, Kim Yak-guk suffers from stomach cancer and he eventually dies. In this way, he is a symbolic figure representing the middle class in a fishing village that is completely ruined, and a lonely otherized subject who is erased by death. In the family tree, as the head of a family he represents the root of a tree, however, he is characterized as a dying being, accepting of the unpredictable family tragedies. In other words, Kim Yak-guk can be held responsible for the tragedy faced by his daughters as he imprisoned himself in both solitude and behavior.

Yong-suk, the eldest daughter, left home at the age of 17 and was soon

See Sang Jin Lee, "The Paradox of Destiny: The Tragic Human Figure in Park Kyung-ni's Novel," Contemporary Fiction Research 56 (2014): 393.

widowed. Subsequently, she is represented as a typical capitalist individual obsessed with money. In addition, she is imprisoned at a detention center after murdering her son, whom she had from an adulterous relationship with a married doctor at Charity Hospital. Later, she is released due to insufficient evidence, but is turned away by her family and becomes estranged. Despite this, Yong-suk, with her eloquence, shows her capitalist identity by enticing the people of the neighborhood with her wealthy life and by occasionally doing favors for her family. For Yong-suk, money becomes a symbolic medium with so-called pseudo-omnipotence. However, in a different interpretation, regardless of ethical issues, she may be considered the gendered representation of a woman who has been freed from men and has achieved economic independence.

Yong-bin, the second daughter, is a devout Christian who attends S college in Seoul and is represented as the most modernized among all the daughters. She builds friendships with Kate, a British missionary healer and evangelist living in Tongyeong and tries to overcome her family's misfortune by sublimating it to religion. Because of her rational and intellectual disposition, Yong-bin is the only child who gains Kim Yak-guk's trust. Unlike the other four daughters, Yong-bin is ethical and calm in everything she says and does. It is worth noting that Park Kyung-ni tries to overcome the tragic fate of many others and the circumstances of the times through the character of Yong-bin. Among the members of the Kim Yakguk family sinking into darkness, Yong-bin is represented as an individual who does not surrender the will to get over tragedy. Therefore, Yong-bin can be said to be a willful person who seeks light in the midst of misfortune and connects the chaos of the present with a hope for the future. However, she lacks close interaction with her family members and is placed in the position of an otherized subject who has to overcome her family's misfortunes. Nevertheless, the setting of the novel reinforces her savior character and ethical representation.

Yong-ran, the third daughter, is the most beautiful among the five daughters and has strong sexual desires. She falls in love with a man named Han-dol, who works at Kim Yak-guk's house. When her sexual obsession and unethical behavior becomes known, she marries Choi Yeon-hak, a drug addict who is sexually disabled. However, while her husband is at the detention center, she has an affair with Handol again. When Yeon-hak returns and finds out about her affair, he murders her mother, Han-sil daek, and Han-dol. Yong-ran, witnesses the crime and becomes insane, wandering the streets in search of Han-dol. The author not only portrays her as an unethical character with a personality disorder and warns the readers about the consequences of her distorted desire, but also uses her tragedy to denounce the violence of the patriarchal system.<sup>1</sup>

Furthermore, due to her innocent and beautiful appearance, she is portrayed as a character growing up in nature, and through the words of the wise and rational Yong-bin, her instinctive behaviors are presented as fresh rather than evil.<sup>2</sup>

Yong-ok, the fourth daughter, is a devout Christian just like Yong-bin, and is devoted to her family. However, similar to Yong-ran, she marries without love and meets a tragic fate. Her husband, Seo Ki-doo, was in charge of Kim Yak-guk's household chores, and originally had his heart set on Yong-ran. However, he married Yong-ok at the request of Kim Yak-guk. Subsequently, Ki-doo's affections do not grow toward Yong-ok, and he spends many of his days outside of the home. When Yong-ok finds that her father-in-law has desires for her, she sets out to find Ki-doo in Busan. When their paths cross, they board a boat back to Tongyeong, however, an accident sinks the boat and kills Yong-ok and her young son. In this way, Yong-ok's sacrificial character and the morality represented by her tragic fate are very similar to that of Han-sil daek.

Finally, Yong-hye, the youngest daughter, is a character who occupies little space in the narrative. Brown haired Yong-hye, takes care of her father who suffering from stomach cancer and her sister, Yong-ran, who has gone mad. She is not presented as an individual who demands things for herself, but rather as an obedient daughter who follows the flow of the family history and is committed to her fate. Yong-hye, similar to Yong-bin, is not an externalized subject who gets caught up in a specific event or is erased by death. Therefore, if Yong-bin is a willful individual who overcomes the dark modern history implied by the ruin of the Kim Yak-guk family and enters modern history, Yong-hye is a passive participant in the trends of the times.

As we have seen so far, Kim Yak-guk, Han-sil daek, and their five daughters are represented as different types of subjects. Furthermore, ethical events are always associated with the representations revealed in entangled relationships with family members and others. Except for Kim Yak-guk, who is in a somewhat ambiguous position, the relationships of the family are defined by (Han-sil daek's) sacrificial behavior, (Yong-bin's) rational thinking, and (Yong-ok's) obedient behavior. Yongok's behavior occurs due to the behaviors of Yong-suk and Yong-ran which are intertwined with politics. This leads to a text structure based on the ethical structure

See Chae-Won Lee, "Romantic and Revolutionary Irony—Focusing on Kim's Daughters," Literature and Imaging 16 (2015): 471-472.

See Yun A Cho, "Original Guilty of Victims of Violence in the Novel of Park Kyung-ni," The Study of Humanities 41 (2011): 148.

discussed above: character relationships, thought activities, and behaviors. The ethical structure of the only excluded norm can be found in the social environment of modern Korean history that dominates the above three factors. One example is Yong-bin, who has received a public education and believes in Christianity and behaves rationally and normatively unlike other characters; another is that of Kim Yak-guk who meets a gisaeng (geisha) despite having a wife, yet is not portrayed as an unethical person.

As such, the four ethical structures appearing in Kim's Daughters progress to a completed narrative through the subdivided ethical knots corresponding to each structure. In the following section, we draw a concrete ethical knot centered on the representation of the above-mentioned figures.

# 3.2 Multi-layered ethical knots of otherized subjects

The ethical representations of otherized subjects dealt with in the previous section form an ethical structure through specific events as the characters engage with others. In this section, I examine the events that occurred in the relationships with others through the ethical structure of ethical literary criticism, focusing on the otherized subjects of Kim Yak-guk, Han-sil daek, and their five daughters. To do this, I analyze the lower ethical knots related to ethical standards, ethical environment, ethical selection, ethical enlightenment, ethical taboo, and ethical dilemma shown in literary texts. By dismantling the ethical knot inherent in the text of Kim's Daughters and connecting it to the ethical structure of character relationships, thought activities, behaviors, and norms, the ethical theme of this novel will be revealed.

To read Kim's Daughters through the lens of ethical literary criticism, it is essential to first understand the ethical environment presented in the novel. Unlike ethical criticism, ethical literary criticism does not evaluate a given literary work as good or evil based on today's moral standards. Instead, it emphasizes so-called "historicism", which explores the ethical values of a given work in relation to a specific historical context and a series of periods in which the text was written.<sup>1</sup> According to ethical literary criticism, the ethical environment refers to the ethical language environment, which means the historical time and space in which a literary work is located. Since the subject of a literary work is fictional history, ethical literary criticism must analyze and criticize a literary work in a specific ethical environment and perform an objective ethical interpretation of the work itself. This is because literature in a specific historical period has a fixed ethical environment as well as an ethical language environment, therefore both must be considered to

See Nie Zhenzhao, "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism," Arcadia 1 (2015): 84.

understand the literature.1

Regarding ethical environment, Kim's Daughters is divided into two parts based on time and space. The first part comprises Chapter 1 and the second comprises Chapters 2 to 6. Quantitatively, this dichotomous division is disproportionate, however, it becomes clear when considering the time and space in which the events take place. While the first chapter deals with the events of Kim Yak-guk's parents' generation, the latter chapters shed light on the Kim family in the 1930s, 20 years after the Korea-Japan annexation was signed on 22 August 1910. As such, this novel shows a disproportionate temporality of approximately two to three years in the first chapter, which covers a 60-year period. Furthermore, the title of the first chapter, "Tongyeong," provides the geographical background of the novel and acts as a mediator of the historical situation of the port opening period, implying space and time simultaneously.<sup>2</sup> Due to this dichotomous separation of time and space, the contents of the first chapter were completely removed from the film, Kim's Daughters (1963), based on this novel, where only the events of Kim Yak-guk family from the second chapter were in focus.

The first ethical structure to examine is the character of Han-sil daek, the wife of Kim Yak-guk. She interacts with Kim Yak-guk, her five daughters, and almost all of the characters associated with them. As described earlier, Han-sil daek occupies an important position in the relational structure of characters and is represented as the most strongly otherized subject in the entangled relationship with others. Until she is murdered by Yong-ran's husband, she always appears as a sacrificial figure. The first step in the ethical choice process is moral awareness, which depends on how suited an individual is to learn and use knowledge.<sup>3</sup> Even in ethical literary criticism, ethical selection implies that human moral selection leads to maturity and perfection. At the same time, some individuals make two or more moral selections, but different selections lead to different results, and thus have different ethical values.4

However, Han-sil daek's behaviors are not enacted for herself, but always stem

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 547-548.

See Su-yeon Yoo, "A Study on the Correlation between Time and Space in Kim's Daughters," Korean Language and Literature 63 (2016): 263.

See Jihyeon Kim and Jeffrey Loewenstein, "Analogical Encoding Fosters Ethical Decision Making Because Improved Knowledge of Ethical Principles Increases Moral Awareness," Journal of Business Ethics 172 (2021): 308.

<sup>4</sup> See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 532.

from a selection for others. In the time and space of Tongyeong, Gyeongsangnamdo, Korea, 20 years after the Korea-Japan annexation, the country collided with a wave of modernization, yet traditional notions of gender, family, education, religion, and occupation still remained. In situations related to Han-sil's daek, examples of ethical choice frequently develop, especially in relation to sexual and family issues. For example, when her husband, Kim Yak-guk, visits So-cheong, a gisaeng, Han-sil daek reveals an ethically selective responsibility and blames herself for not having a son.

Han-sil daek had made it impossible for their descendants to come to their precious family and not be able to have children. She was ashamed to see her husband and ashamed to see others. She secretly asked to husband how it would be to get other woman for his descendants, but Kim Yak-guk did not say anything. However, Han-sil daek only thought of the many daughters as the heavens. (Park 86)

After a son named Yong-hwan died shortly after birth, Han-sil daek lived more sacrificially due to the guilt of having five daughters. The same is true for the third daughter, Yong-ran, who is most troubled. In the end, Han-sil daek is completely erased from the narrative when Yong-ran's husband murders her. The quote below shows the scene where Han-sil daek is stabbed to death by Yeon-hak's axe while she was going to rescue Yong-ran.

Han-sil deak was beaten in the rain and seemed to be dreaming. [...] When she got to the front of the house, the rain poured even more torrentially and lightning flashed. [...] There was no sound. Han-sil daek relaxed a bit and wiped the rainwater that ran down her face and shook the private door. "Yongran! Please open the door!" [...] Han-sil daek struggled to hold onto the private door. The door swung open, dark shadows. [...] Han-sil daek felt something pouring over her head. "Oh! Save me!" Han-sil daek collapsed. Han-dol and Yong-ran, who had been sleeping deeply in this commotion, woke up. They saw Yeon-hak wielding an axe. Yeon-hak saw them too. With a smirk, he approached. The axe held in the eyes of Han-dol is nailed. (Park 332-333)

As seen in the quote above, Han-sil daek dies while trying to rescue her daughter from her husband. We can discuss the ethical selection exhibited by her behavior at this moment; however, the problem is that her ethical choice, represented by the

ethical responsibility of sacrifice, ends in death. Therefore, is this ethical selection correct? Here we fall into a kind of ethical dilemma. Ethical dilemma, one of the ethical structures of ethical literary criticism, is a paradox and consists of two moral propositions. In other words, choosing one of the two results in a violation of ethics, or universal moral principles.

Further, the premise of an ethical dilemma is that one of the two correct options must be chosen because, when a selection is made, the ethical dilemma is fully revealed. This also means that both selections have moral properties and are both right selections. No matter which option is selected, ethically, all of them violate the ethics of another protest, and there is no choice but to form a moral paradox. Therefore, even if the choice is moral, the consequences of the choice are bound to be immoral. In the case of Han-sil daek, she concentrates on the latter, choosing to prevent her daughter's affair from being discovered and at the same time save her from Yeon-hak. In this way, even though both options had all the moral attributes mentioned in the premise of the ethical dilemma, choosing one term leads to the immoral result of the ethical self-dying and the unethical saving of her daughter.

Second, we consider the ethical structure shown in the character of Kim Yakguk. Kim Yak-guk is a key figure who is intertwined with almost all the characters, similar to Han-sil daek. With a calm and gloomy personality, Kim Yak-guk is seen as a solitary figure even though he enjoys the position of the head of the household and when he meets a gisaeng named So-cheong. Along with this personal family history, the life and death of Kim Yak-guk are placed in a double narrative interwoven with the historical background. He comes from a family that has lost their financial wealth. His mother Suk-jeong committed suicide, and his father killed Wook, the son of Mr. Song from Gamaegol. Both his wife Han-sil daek and fourth daughter Yong-ok died before him, and Yong-ran, his third daughter, became insane. The downfall in the life of Kim Yak-guk is shown to be a part of the wave of change sweeping through Korea at this time of the transition from pre-modern history to modern history. The following quote shows the attitude of Kim Yak-guk while facing the miserable situation of his times.

On August 29, 1920, when Seong-su was thirty-two years old, the shameful Korea-Japan Annexation Treaty was announced. The Korean Empire finally announced the end of its troubled fate. Kim Yak-guk (Seong-soo) did not show any emotion in the midst of such great fluctuations. The older brother in-law,

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 523-524.

Jung-gu, chased after him with bare, bloodshot eyes and cried out, but Kim Yak-guk treated him with a heavy silence. (Park 71)

Kim Yak-guk does not impose his values or beliefs on his family or those around him. He always occupies a kind of spectator position, illuminating others objectively from a third person's point of view. However, he actively intervenes in the relationships of others, which is evident in the incident where Yong-ran has an affair with Han-dol and Kim Yak-guk drives him out of the house. This behavior is different from the rather passive, fragmented, and serious attitude exhibited by Kim Yak-guk throughout the novel. In the act of visiting a gisaeng almost every day, an ethical structure regarding a kind of ethical taboo is presented. At the same time, the ethical dilemma he feels due to these behaviors is evident.

For Kim Yak-guk, who endured alone in the desolate Sarang room, the atmosphere in So-cheong's room was very soft and cosy. Moreover, in his eyes, who only treated Han-sil deak with no manners as a woman, So-cheong's appearance was resolute and beautiful. But his heart doesn't agree. It was strange. That said, he had no desire to get out of his seat. It's like being sunk in a bathroom, but it's a tired feeling that doesn't want to move. (Park 178)

The ethical structure shown in the narrative of the eldest daughter, Yong-suk, can be analyzed in terms of thought activities and behavior. The thought activities are connected with her values of being blindly obsessed with money, and regarding behavior, her murder of her child born from an unfaithful relationship creates ethical knots. First, we consider Yong-suk's thought activities. In the novel, the women of Tongyeong at the time contributed to their family earnings by doing business that fit their own fractions. Yong-suk's husband dies not long after her marriage and she becomes a widow, however, she increases her wealth by selling whole dried fish and playing interest games. Meanwhile, when Kim Yak-guk's new boat is wrecked and the family suffers great economic hardship, Han-sil daek goes to Yong-suk for financial help. However, Yong-suk is busy addressing only her own interests. In the future, she does help her family, but as discussed above, she is presented as an unethical individual with a materialistic attitude.

Along with these thought activities, it is worth examining the ethical knots in Yong-suk's behaviors. She becomes pregnant after having an affair with a doctor at Charity Hospital, where her son Dong-hoon was being treated. Subsequently, she is afraid that her brother-in-law will drive her out and steal her money, therefore

she throws the child into a pond and kills him shortly after birth. However, once the doctor's wife finds her brother-in-law, Yong- suk and the doctor are eventually arrested. She is later released due to lack of evidence, and further argues confidently with those who gossip about her. This bizarre incident leads not only to Yong-suk's impure political relationship, but also to the ethical taboo of infanticide.

Taboo was a key element responsible for maintaining ethical order in the early days of human civilization. Furthermore, as various taboos were formed along with the development of human civilization, they became an unwritten law for maintaining social order. Human instincts are continuously suppressed by civilization, and among them, the most thoroughly suppressed ones are corruption and murder. Non-compliance with these taboos is a motif that induces the tragic ending of a novel or movie. Although such incidents appear several times in Kim's Daughters, Yong-suk's policing and infanticide are representative of taboo cases.

Yong-suk went up to the front door of the police station and looked around the whistle crowd. Then she kept her head upright and put her feet forward. [...] "Am I guilty of killing, why?" With a shout, both hands flashed up. The crowd unknowingly takes a step backwards. "I know how to die without avenging myself! Even if I chew and eat all of you, I won't satisfy!" (Park 235-236)

The fourth ethical structure we will look into is that of Yong-bin, the second daughter, who is the most noteworthy character in Kim's Daughters. Yong-bin's ethical structure can similarly be observed through her thoughts and behaviors. First, Yong-bin shows a social identity that is different from other characters in many aspects. On the one hand, as a woman who actively accepts modern culture, she shows her identity as a devout Christian. Also, as an intelligent woman who received a higher education in Seoul at that time, she is presented as an individual who rationally reflects on the tragedy of the family history. On the other hand, she has the identity of a fragile woman who is worried about her mismatched love with Hong-seop and her unstable future. Nevertheless, Yong-bin does not blame others or external circumstances for the tragic situations of the individuals and families. Rather, through religious and metaphysical thinking, shown in the quote below, she regulates her inner suffering and outward behavior.

Hong-seop bowed his head. Yong-bin turned around without a word. Then she

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 521-522.

stepped down the stairs in an upright position. The moonlight poured over her face. Her face was wet with tears, but she did not bow her head. (Park 229)

Ms. Kate, I am not going to pray. You cannot call on the Lord with a heart full of hatred and resentment [...] I'm sorry, sir. I will come back when I have peace of mind. (Park 233).

Yong-bin's ethical structure that shows these thought activities and behaviors is connected with ethical enlightenment. According to ethical literary criticism, human beings can have ethical consciousness only after undergoing ethical enlightenment, after which they can enter the stage of ethical choice as discussed above. In the case of children, it is said that in the stage prior to ethical enlightenment, they are essentially indistinguishable from animals. In the process of learning, reading, and writing, children's intelligence and life skills are strengthened, and they then enter the process of ethical selection. All human beings, not just children, need knowledge for ethical selection and ethical enlightenment. Of all the characters in the novel, Yong-bin is the one who best demonstrates ethical enlightenment. Her gender identity as a woman positions her as the only savior who believes in a hopeful future different from the hopeless present, interlocking with a social identity of someone that has received higher education and practices the Christianity.

Yong-ran, the third daughter, is placed in the most radical and complex ethical knot. The other characters surrounding her include her mother Han-sil deak, Han-dol who is a servant of the Kim Yak-guk family, Ki-doo who originally intended to marry her, and Yeon-hak who is her husband and a drug addict. Her outstanding beauty, bewitching figure, and sexual greed are factors that construct her unhappiness in life. Rumors about her premarital relationship with Yeon-hak spread throughout the town, resulting in an unwanted match and extreme violence. Unable to forget her love for Han-dol after her marriage, Yong-ran meets him again one day and cheats on her husband with him. Yeon-hak finds out about this and kills both Han-sil daek and Han-dol. Yong-ran, who witnessed this incident, is eventually driven mad. As such, ethical knots found in her character's relationships and behaviors are mainly related to ethical taboos and are similar to the aspects of those examined in Yong-suk's ethical structure above. However, while Yong-sook's ethical taboo is mainly related to ego-centered thought activities, Yong-ran's case stems from relationships with others.

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 517.

The axe held in Han-dol's eyes is nailed. The axe rotated in mid-air. In an instant, Yong-ran's body soared. She was running and Yeon-hak ran after her. Yong-ran steps on the collapsed Han-sil daek and runs out of the private gate. [...] The day has come and Han-sil daek was in front of the private gate, and Han-dol was lying next to the wall. The water in the yard was dark red. One or two lives have come to an end. [..] Around this time, Yong-ran was wearing a torn skirt and was diligently walking to the new site where the morning market was taking place. "Hi, have you seen my Han-dol?" (Park 333)

Taboo is an element directly connected to the ethical standards emphasized in ethical literary criticism. Ethical standards are the ideal goals that humans must uphold in their lives and are the results of one's own creation over a long history. Therefore, taboos and ethical standards show the same orientation, which is also reflected in the desire of humans to build an ethical society. However, as psychoanalysis has proven, humans have a desire to deviate from and oppress what is taboo. Works of art represent such unconscious desires in various ways. In Kim's Daughters, human desire can be observed through the taboo events related to Yong-suk and Yong-ran.

Next, we consider the ethical knot derived from Yong-ok, the fourth daughter of Kim Yak-guk. It is derived from her relationships with her husband, Ki-doo, and her father-in-law, as well as her behavior toward them. Yong-ok, who has an obedient personality, marries Ki-doo, who originally intended to marry Yong-ran, and has a son. However, Ki-doo remains compassionate for Yong-ran, and does not give his heart to his wife, whose appearance is described as shabby due to the housework she performs. She never complains to her husband who rarely stays at home, and subsequently evokes desires in her father-in-law. One evening while she was sleeping, her father-in-law rushes in and touches her chest, and she bites his arm and knocks him down with a mortar spatula.

Yong-ok felt the blood rushing through her body in an instant. She hit the shadow's chest with her fist. The clogged mouth was opened, but she did not make a sound. Because the shadow was an inspiration from her father-in-law. Yong-ok bit the arm of the old beast that was approaching. "Who, who sees? Oh no one knows. Hold on..." The fierce struggle between the female fox and the old wolf was fierce in the night—in the veil of the night. Yong-ok rolled

See Dae Geun Lim, "The Academic Value of "Chinese School" Ethical Literary Criticism", Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 2 (2021): 196.

around and sprinkled the ashes from the brazier she could get on to her face. (Park 379)

Finally, Yong-ok boards the boat bound for Busan with the son, but cannot meet her husband due to crossed sea routes. However, when she hears from Ki-doo's friend, Mr Kim, that her husband has returned to Tongyeong, she gets back on board the night merchant ship. Unfortunately, the ship sinks off the coast of Gadeok island, and when it is salvaged, Yong-ok and her children return to Tongyeong as corpses. Examining her father-in-law's attitude toward her tragic death reveals the dual morality of human beings: relief and remorse, as follows:

Ki-doo falls down on the pedestal. He roars and beats the floor. After picking up the telegram quickly and reading it, Yong-ok's father-in-law's expression was close to relief for a moment. Yong-ok's death only buried his shame forever. But the next moment, the veins on his forehead swelled up. It was because of the fear of unavoidable remorse. (Park 399)

The youngest daughter, Yong-hye, does not have a special ethical knot in the novel. However, Yong-hye's behavior is linked to the ethical value of family love that is depicted in her act of taking care of her father and Yong-ran. In ethical literary criticism, ethical values are the edification values and suggestive values of literature, and collectively refer to both positive and negative moral values. Yong-ok is the most lightly treated member of the family, but along with Yong-bin, she shows positive moral values.

So far, this article has elucidated that many characters in Kim's Daughters are wiped out by death or illness due to certain events or relationships with others around them. However, the author does not end the novel's narrative with a tragic situation, but rather with the universal will of human beings to look toward a hopeful future. This can be said to be the author's thematic consciousness shown through Yong-bin's character. Through Yong-bin, who leaves Tongyeong at the end of the novel, Park Kyung-ni transcends all tragic situations and foreshadows the positivity of the future to come. The unique literary value of Kim's Daughters is found at this point. Therefore, this novel can be said to be a narrative of hope and human will to overcome unpredictable tribulations, going beyond factual statements about tragic events and relationships with countless others.

See Nie Zhenzhao, An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al, Seoul: HUINE, 2022, 517.

"Baby, come on board."

Merchants protruded from the ship like beans.

"Good-bye, eldest mother, good-bye."

Yong-bin and Yong-hye waved their hands.

The ship was slowly pushed out of the pier. Water poured out from the waist of the boat.

"Boo-woong."

The ship announces departure. Faces receding, gas lights, shouts.

At Tongyeong Port, the curtain is slowly lowered.

There was Yong-hye's face as white as an evening primrose on the deck railing, and Yong-bin's silent weeping in the cold air.

Spring is not far away, but the wind is cold. (Park 415)

As seen in the quote above, Yong-bin's departure from Tongyeong is an active behavior to heal her emotional wounds. This is an expression of the will to lead a concrete and creative life, and it encompasses the meaning of active departure to overcome the decline of the family and the realization of the cause of national liberation. As such, it can be seen that the numerous ethical knots in the literary text of *Kim's Daughters* result in the transcendent ethical line of hope. In addition, hope is symbolized by the time and space of Tongyeong Port, the parting from home, and the coming of spring. It is a paradoxical moment as the tragic ethical knots converge to a hopeful ethical line.

This study has considered the text of *Kim's Daughters* from an ethical point of view through ethical literary criticism. Analyzing a work through the lens of ethical literary criticism allows us to investigate the implications of literary texts from a new ethical perspective. This is because the process of deriving ethical knots goes beyond the primary goal of ethical text analysis and allows us to grasp the ethical line (ethical structure) that the knots are connected to. Therefore, ethical literary criticism can be understood as a theory that allows the analysis of an ethical narrative by expanding the linear text and ethically interpreting its multiple layers.

In the text of *Kim's Daughters*, ethical knots were derived from Kim Yak-guk, Han-sil daek, and their five daughters through individual ethical events and the collective fate of a family. In this way, using ethical literary criticism to link

<sup>1</sup> See In Kyung Kim, "Exploring the Way of Thinking and Identity of Female Characters in Park Kyung-ni's Novels - *Drifting Island, Kim's Daughters, Market and Battlefield,*" Korean Language and Culture 66 (2018): 192.

the ethical line across the multi-layered ethical knots is the same as the process of reading the ethical structure inherent in the literary work. Thus, ethical literary criticism does not stop at witnessing the tragedy revealed in the individual ethical knots of Kim's Daughters, but also leads to the ethical line of universal human will and future-oriented hope.

#### 4. The Necessity and Continuity of Ethical Literary Criticism

In this study, ethical issues appearing in Kim's Daughters by one of Korea's leading writers, Park Kyung-ni, were explored based on the ethical structure of ethical literary criticism. Most of the characters in this novel were tragically otherized in Korean modern history and erased from the narrative through death or specific events. Summoning otherized subjects in the novel can be said to be one of the ethical roles of ethical literary criticism. Accordingly, this paper expanded the academic critique of literary ethics by illuminating the ethical issues inherent in the otherized subjects or specific events that are changed from life to death.

As previously stated, the goal of ethical literary criticism is to deconstruct and combine the multi-layered figures in a literary text from an ethical perspective to construct the ethical norms of the real world, the source of literary works. Dae Geun found ethical literary criticism suitable for both synchronic and diachronic contexts. According to him, ethical literary criticism emphasizes the process of analyzing specific texts and is not an abstract methodology to study literature. This is the point connected to the synchronic expansion of the ethical literary criticism he refers to. Furthermore, ethical literary criticism can seek a diachronic expansion because classical, modern, and related literature deals with the history of literature. Due to the simultaneous expansion of these synchronic and diachronic contexts, it is revealed that ethical literary criticism is a universal theoretical methodology.<sup>1</sup>

This study analyzed Kim's Daughters through multi-layered ethical issues and drew the ethical knots that occur centering on the four standards of ethical structure in the novel: human relations, thought activities, behaviors, and norms. Furthermore, by applying sub-concepts such as ethical standards, ethical environment, ethical selection, ethical enlightenment, ethical taboo, and ethical dilemma, an integrated use of ethical literary criticism was attempted. It is expected that this article will not be limited to a single case of ethical literary criticism that analyzes literary texts but will have multinational academic applications and be seen as a significant attempt to criticize ethical issues in Korean literature.

See Dae Geun Lim, "Ethical Literary Criticism and Korean Literature: An Introduction," Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 2 (2021): 187.

Humans live in relationships with countless others in the world. A literary work is an art genre that represents the intertwined aspects of such groups through words. This is because a literary work encompasses a thought and relationship between humans and all objects in the world. This entanglement of others can only progress toward coexistence and symbiosis in reality through literature when considering the universal common sense of ethics, that is, the ultimate object of ethical literary criticism. Therefore, the ethical critique of the concrete relationships of the entities inherent in a literary text is nothing more than understanding the world we live in here and now and the people in it.

Humanity's common desire for coexistence is a goal shared by ethical literary criticism, which seeks to recall this desire from literary works to reality in a modern society where ethical consciousness is gradually diluted. Therefore, ethical literary criticism emphasizes the need for a practical discourse that reinterprets the relationship between literature and ethics as texts for modern people in chaos and disorder. In addition, to perform these functions, academic continuity through the expansion of research is required. It is the responsibility of writers who create literary works, their readers, and scholars who criticize them to gain insight into the ethical issues of literary texts pursued by ethical literary criticism and mediate them into the real world. This is the ultimate goal of ethical literary criticism and exemplifies why ethical literary criticism has inexhaustible academic continuity and is needed in our times as a critical discourse.

#### **Works Cited**

- Cho, Yun A. "Original Guilty of Victims of Violence in the Novel of Park Kyung-ni." The Study of Humanities 41 (2011): 137-168.
- Hue, Hoang and Nguyen Hoang Nguyen. "Traditional Culture in Contemporary Vietnamese Poetry: A Perspective from Nie Zhenzhao's Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 1 (2020): 53-64.
- Kim, In Kyung. "Exploring the Way of Thinking and Identity of Female Characters in Park Kyungri's Novels-Drifting Island, Kim's Daughters, Market and Battlefield." Korean Language and Culture 66 (2018): 183-199
- Kim, Jihyeon and Jeffrey Loewenstein. "Analogical Encoding Fosters Ethical Decision Making Because Improved Knowledge of Ethical Principles Increases Moral Awareness." Journal of Business Ethics 172 (2020): 307-324.
- Lee, Chae-Won. "Romantic and Revolutionary Irony Focusing on Kim's Daughters." Literature and Imaging 16 (2015): 471-472.
- Lee, Hye-kyung. "A Study on the Tragic Worldview Appeared in Park Kyung-ni's Novel—Focusing on

- Kim's Daughters." Korean Language 84 (2020): 403-463.
- Lee, Sang Jin. "The Paradox of Destiny: The Tragic Human Figure in Park Kyung-ni's Novel." Contemporary Fiction Research 56 (2014): 373-408.
- Lim, Dae Geun. "Ethical Literary Criticism and Korean Literature: An Introduction." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 2 (2021): 187-190.
- —. "The Academic Value of "Chinese School" Ethical Literary Criticism." Interdisciplinary Studies of Literature 2 (2021): 194-203.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: A Basic Theory." Forum for World Literature Studies 2 (2021): 189-207.
- —. An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Kim Soon Jin, et al. Seoul: HUINE, 2022.
- —. "Towards an Ethical Literary Criticism." Arcadia 1 (2015): 83-101.
- Nie Zhenzhao and Shang Biwu. "Ethical Literary Criticism: East and West." Arcadia 1 (2015): 4-8.
- Park, Kyung-ni. The Dreamer Creates It. Paju: Nanam, 1994.
- —. Kim's Daughters, Seoul: Marronnier Books, 2013.
- Yoo, Su-yeon. "A Study on the Correlation between Time and Space in Kim's Daughters." Korean Language and Literature 63 (2016): 257-281.

# **Ethics of Korean International Adoptees' Utilization of Cyberspace and DNA Technology**

### Jin Suk Bae

**Abstract:** Ethical literary criticism is a literary approach that analyzes and interprets literary work through the study of the ethical elements embedded in the structure and meaning of literary texts. This article examines various ethical issues and concerns regarding the use of biotechnology among South Korean international adoptees in their search for biological families. Specifically, this article delves in and interprets ethical elements in the anthology, Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, which comprises 38 essays by Korean adoptees who found their biological family through genetic information, the power of science, and the Internet, with the help of a non-profit organization. Reunion with biological families helps Korean adoptees heal past traumas caused by transnational adoption, untie twisted ethical knots of abandonment, and clear doubts about their origins and identity. First, this article provides background information on Korean intercountry adoptions and advancements in DNA technology, and then analyzes how DNA testing technology has radically impacted the search and reunion process for adoptees. It also discusses how Korean adoptees deal with the consequences of their reconnections with biological family members. The anthology is meaningful in that it sheds light on the less-known transnational and current experiences of Korean adoptees, focusing on recent developments in science and social media.

**Keywords:** Korean international adoptees; DNA technology; biological family search; social media; mixed-race Koreans

**Author: Jin Suk Bae** is currently Research Professor at the Academy of Mobility Humanities, Konkuk University (Seoul, Korea). Her academic interest lies in researching the regional and global Korean diaspora, Korean diaspora literature and Korean international adoptees (E-mail: bigblue202@konkuk.ac.kr). This work was supported by the Ministry of Education of the Republic of Korea and the National Research Foundation of Korea 【NRF-2018S1A6A3A03043497】.

标题:韩裔海外被收养人的网络空间和 DNA 技术使用的伦理

内容摘要: 文学伦理学批评是一种文学批评方法, 它主要通过研究文学文本 结构和意义中蕴含的伦理因素来分析和阐释文学作品。本文主要研究韩裔跨 国被收养人在寻找亲生家庭过程中使用生物技术而产生的各种伦理问题和担 忧。具体来说,本文将深入研究并解读文集《终于在一起: DNA 时代的收养 与重逢》中的伦理要素。该文集由38篇韩裔被收养者的文章组成,他们在一 个非营利组织的帮助下, 通过遗传信息、科学的力量和互联网找到了自己的 亲生家庭。与亲生家庭的团聚不仅帮助了韩裔被收养人愈合过去由跨国收养 造成的创伤, 而且有利于解开由遗弃导致的扭曲的伦理结, 消除对出身和身 份的疑虑。本文首先整理了韩裔跨国收养和 DNA 技术进步的背景资料,接着 分析了 DNA 检测技术如何从根本上影响被收养人的寻找和团聚过程。此外, 文章还讨论了韩裔被收养人如何处理他们与亲生家庭成员重新联系的后果。 总之、该文集的意义在于、揭示了韩裔被收养人鲜为人知的跨国经历和当前 的经历, 重点介绍了科学和社会媒体的最新发展。

关键词: 韩裔跨国被收养人; DNA 技术; 寻找亲属; 社交媒体; 混血韩裔 作者简介: 裵真嫩, 韩国建国大学移动人文学研究院研究教授, 主要研究领域 为区域和国际韩裔离散、韩裔离散文学、韩裔海外被收养人等。本文为韩国教 育部和韩国国家研究基金会项目【NRF-2018S1A6A3A03043497】的阶段性成果。

#### Introduction

Ethical literary criticism is a literary approach that analyzes, interprets, and examines literary work through the study of the ethical elements embedded in the structure and meaning of any given literary text (Kuek and Soon 283; Nie 58). Autobiographers commonly evolve around one's ethical choices in response to the vices caused by one's natural will and when facing ethical dilemmas caused by life's challenges (Kuek and Soon 282). This article delves into various ethical issues and concerns related to the use of biotechnology among South Korean (hereafter Korean or South Korean) international adoptees, mostly residing in the U.S., in their efforts to find their biological families. Specifically, this article scrutinizes and interprets ethical elements in the anthology, Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA. This anthology is a collection of 38 narratives written by Korean adoptees who found their biological family members through genetic information, the power of science, and the Internet, with the help of a non-profit organization, 325KAMRA. Authors in *Together at Last* endeavored to find their biological family through Deoxyribonucleic Acid (DNA) testing, which was previously impossible in terms of both cost and limits of technology. Reuniting with their respective biological families, Korean adoptees healed past traumas inflicted by transnational adoption and untied twisted ethical knots of abandonment, and clear doubts about their origins and identity.

Recent advancements in science, especially genome mapping technologies, and the prevalence of social media have variously impacted Korean adoptees. Social spaces and social relations have recently been reconstructed through various mobile forms enhanced by highly developed information and communication technologies (Shin and Lee 1). Today, overseas Korean adoptees express their sorrows, hardships, hopes, maternal love, and resilience not only via written literary works but also via blogs, YouTube channels, or participation in online communities. Moreover, given the affordability and accuracy of modern DNA testing, several of them have located their family members.

Against this backdrop, this article analyzes narratives in Korean adoptees' anthology to explore various issues, including how DNA testing technology has altered the search and reunion process for adoptees, and how they deal with the consequences of their connections with hitherto unknown family members. This article is expected to improve our understanding of mobility technologies' influence on Korean American adoptees' daily experiences of ethical choices and on their lives through their own writings. Prior to text analysis, in the next section, the article will provide background information on Korean intercountry adoption trends and developments in DNA technology.

# **Korean Intercountry Adoption**

Since the 1950s, approximately 200,000 Korean children have been sent abroad for adoption in countries such as the U.S., France, Sweden, Denmark, etc. Over 40,000 of these adoptees were of mixed race (C. Kim, "Koreans & Camptowns"; Kopacz 338). In the Korean society, which honors family values emphasizing marriage and "purity" of blood, prejudices and discrimination against unmarried parents and mixed-race individuals make domestic adoption difficult, leading to the trend of overseas adoption of Korean children (Oh and Choi 766). Ever since the mid-1950s, when children of Korean-American parentage were ostracized for mixed racial heritage, stigma has been a constant factor in South Korean children's international adoptions. Later, the shame of single parenthood fueled abandonments, and the poor local economy favored international adoptions (McDermott, "Adopted Koreans").

An overwhelming majority of Korean children have been adopted in the U.S. At first, with the passage of the Refugee Relief Act in the U.S. Congress in 1954, Korean War orphans and mixed-race Koreans born to American soldiers and Korean women started being adopted in the U.S. Out of the total number of Korean international adoptees, 89.8% were adopted in the U.S. between 1958 and 1968; 51.8% between 1969 and 1975; 68.5% between 1981 and 1990; 74.2% in 2000, and 76.5% in 2010 (Yoon 222).

Issues related to overseas Korean adoptees have been researched in the fields of literature, sociology, and child welfare studies, with a focus on the factors affecting the identity and birth searches of Korean adoptees as well as supportive measures for them (Lee 118-119). A cross-nationally adopted child may experience assimilation pressure or face discrimination in an American family or society. Whereas later generations of adoptees had culture camps and social workers instructing adoptive parents to keep their children's birth culture intact, first-wave adoptions emphasized complete assimilation and the erasure of the Korean heritage (Doolan XX). For these reasons, international adoptees often feel like strangers or experience identity crises. The more often Korean international adoptees have experienced identity crises while growing up, and the older they are at the time of adoption, the more likely they are to search for their biological family (Ahn and Kwon 369). They may even return to Korea to locate their origins after reaching adulthood; between 3,000-5,000 international adoptees visit Korea annually (Jeong and Lee 13).

These adoptees have recreated their unique experiences in the form of novels, autobiographies, and films. Adoption literature comprises a narrative structure of an identity and roots searching journey for those unware of their origin, where the traumatic narrative of abandonment plays a central role (D. Kim 13). Adoptees have expressed their sense of identity not only through traditional media and platforms such as books and movies, but also through the Internet. Korean adoptees mutually interact through multi-layered and diverse platforms, such as blogs, YouTube, Podcasts, and Facebook. For example, a blog by Don Gordon Bell, a firstgeneration mixed-race Korean adoptee, discovers and shares stories of orphans and adoptees related to the Korean War. Additionally, there are many adoptee-run online communities.1

Whereas certain overseas adoptees refuse to locate or are uninterested in identifying their biological families, other actively search for them. In the past, adoptees used fax and letters, employed private investigators, visited adoption agencies or government offices, or appeared in newspapers or on television shows to find their biological family in Korea. Recently, the use of DNA technology for this purpose has also become popular (C. Kim, "Koreans & Camptowns"). Moreover, there is a non-profit organization, 325KAMRA, devoted to reuniting Korean adoptees with their respective biological families through DNA testing.<sup>2</sup>

See Korean War Baby: https://koreanwarbaby.blogspot.com accessed 4 October 2021.

See 325KAMRA: https://www.325kamra.org accessed 4 October 2021.

Founded in 2015 by mixed-race Korean adoptees in the U.S., it has distributed DNA test kits to Koreans and Korean adoptees worldwide. The organization also helps Korean adoptees understand the science of DNA and how it can be used for their purpose via a Facebook group. Although there is a website to facilitate interaction among Korean adoptees desirous of finding their biological families, most of the information is actually exchanged via Facebook pages and groups.

# **Development of the DNA Technology**

Over the past decade, the number of websites offering DNA testing to allow users peer into their heritage and health has skyrocketed in the U.S. In 2002, the ancestral search company, Ancestry, entered the DNA testing business. In 2006, 23andMe was founded. In 2012, AncestryDNA, an autosomal test that provides users with information about their ethnicity was launched. An autosomal DNA test matches one's DNA with that of people of common ancestry to facilitate the discovery of one's ethnic origin (Baffer 147).

The DNA is a critical site for information production and home genetics companies have flourished for more than a decade in the U.S. According to an estimate by MIT Technology Review, more than 26 million people have taken athome ancestry tests (Dore, "Despite Mixed Results"). Many people in the U.S. register with DNA databases to search information about their ethnic origins and potential health risks or to discover distant relatives. Rapidly expanding DNA databases have helped numerous Korean adoptees identify their biological families. Moreover, the easy availability of testing kits, both online and in physical stores, has enabled many adopted people and their descendants find information about their family and genetic histories without the help of the State or an adoption agency. Furthermore, a biological parent does not have to undergo a genetic test to be identified; an adoptee can discover a biological connection to a relative of a biological parent and then use that link to identify their real parents (Baffer 163).

Current efforts to incorporate DNA and genetic technologies into post-adoption experiences both encompass and exceed the way experiences have been managed in the past. That is, DNA tests can address one's desire to learn about their identity and medical history, and to form new kinships. Similarly, individuals conceived through the assisted reproductive technology (ART) are using direct-to-consumer DNA tests to identify other offspring of the same donor. People have held family reunions with those sharing their lineage, joined sibling registries, and established full communities of the offspring of one donor (Baffer 166).

# **Experiences of Marginalization in Korea and the U.S.**

Here this article will discuss Korean adoptees' narratives of their sense of isolation or experiences of marginalization both in Korea and the U.S. Several authors have written about their childhood memories in Korea before their adoption. Lisa Jackson was born in South Korea, and in 1967, at age five, she was adopted by a family in the U.S. Jackson recalled being discriminated against and bullied because of her mixed-race background by other Korean children in elementary school in Korea before she was moved to the U.S.

Their taunts about my brown skin and curly hair stung me deeply. They told me I was very ugly and that I should go away, that they did not want to be my friend. It was the first time that I was ever subject to such blatant insults. Life was good with my adoptive parents, they were absolutely wonderful, but this couldn't soothe the emotional wounds from my painful past. (Jackson 4-5)

Furthermore, many multiracial Koreans born in Korea but later adopted to the U.S. have testified encountering alienation, prejudice, and discrimination in the American society. Korean adoptees are often adopted transnationally as well as transracially by white Americans. Thus, adoptees were not raised in families who shared their experiences of racism. Korean adoptees face racial prejudice or bullying at school because of their Asian or mixed-race physique; however, they often do not have racial role models or cultural buffers. Blair King, adopted to the U.S. from Korea in 1960 at age three, narrates:

I never attended any Korean adoptee picnic or any other adoption type of event. I might have been introduced to another Korean adoptee at some time in my life, but I can't remember. From time to time, I would be called a racial slur in elementary school. I never mentioned it to my parents. I know that they were uncomfortable with topic. Later in life when my mother found out that particular classmates had called me names and slanted their eyes, she asked why I never told her. I didn't have the heart to tell her that it was because I didn't think she would do anything about it. Knowing her, she would have denied that this was even happening and would have told me just to ignore the whole thing. (King 204-205)

# Hopeful to Find Biological Family because of Technological Advancement

In general, the increased public awareness about the contribution of genetics to health and disease, along with recent technological advancements, could be a major driving force for the growth and expansion of direct-to-consumer genetic testing (DTC-GT) companies in the U.S. Supplying consumers with their genetic health information, DTC-GT can encourage healthier lifestyle choices. Furthermore, proponents of this service argue that this information could also promote increased compliance with health-screening practices. Patients can use this form of more individualized genetic health information to adjust their health and lifestyle choices accordingly. There are three main motivating factors for adoptees to pursue DTC-GTs: the search for some form of identity; the desire for health-related information; and general curiosity (Childers 18). Given the easy and affordable accessibility of DNA technology, many adoptees have recently become interested and hopeful in their search for their biological family.

Tim Thornton was adopted to the U.S. from South Korea in 1959. He thought it was impossible to identify his biological parents until recent developments in DNA testing aroused his "curiosity":

I spent most of my early life lying to myself that my birth family didn't matter to me, and that my adopted parents were the only ones that did. I think this was because I truly thought there was no way to find out who they were. Only in recent years I have become more curious because of the advances in DNA testing. (Thornton 10).

Thomas Park Clement was born in Korea during the Korean War and was adopted to the U.S. in 1958. He marvels how with the passage of time and development of technology, things that were once impossible are now possible. He says: "As time passes and technology develops, many things that were thought impossible are now possible through DNA testing. I never wanted to actually meet my birth family in person, but I was curious about what my birth father looked like. Was there any resemblance? I had no desire to connect with my paternal side" (1).

For adoptees, the efforts to identify their biological origin resemble a fill-in-theblanks kind of exercise. Korean adoptees not only wanted information about their real parents and reconnect with them using genetic technology, many multiracial adoptees were even curious about their origin and ethnic composition. Linda Papi Rounds was born in South Korea in 1964 and was adopted by an American family.

Rounds narrate that "I took a DNA test. I knew I was part Korean but wanted to find out what my other half was. I was just curious. I didn't intend to find birth parents because I didn't think it was possible" (68).

#### Alternative to the Old-Fashioned Method of Biological Family Search

The anthology reveals how consumer DNA testing has radically altered the search and reunion process for adoptees. Due to advancements in genetic testing science and technology, numerous Korean adoptees have now acquired critical information about their biological origin, which was impossible to obtain from adoption documents. Lisa Futrell was born in 1958, five years after the Korean War ended. She was adopted to the U.S. in 1959 when she was one year old. Futrell began searching for her biological parents in 1986, and after more than 30 years of searching, DNA testing reunited her with her real mother in 2018. "Thirty-one years had passed since I began searching in 1986. My journey has had many roadblocks and disappointments, and here were moments when I thought about giving up. But my optimism and perseverance paid off" (Futrell 26).

Until recently, formal adoption paperwork was the only accessible path toward personal adoption histories. Moreover, in the past, adoptions in South Korea were performed in secret. Thus, adoptees had little information about their biological history, which was tightly held by the government and adoption agencies (Jeong and Lee 11). After the 2011 adoption law revisions, Korean adoptees can now access their full birth records, but only with their biological parents' consent. Additionally, government adoption files are often falsified, incomplete, or missing, making it difficult, or even impossible, to track down one's biological parents. DNA testing offers a way around such bureaucratic hurdles (McDermott "Adopted Koreans").

The influence of social networks among Korean international adoptees is noteworthy in this context. As DNA testing is becoming an increasingly important and effective—method for finding biological families, overseas adoptee support organizations publicize and offer opportunities for adoptees to undergo DNA tests. Members of the 325KAMRA also travel worldwide to distribute DNA kits to Korean adoptees. Sharon Mellor, who was adopted to the U.S. in the late 1950s, became "hopeful" upon learning that many adoptees had found their family with the help of genetic technology:

In 2017, I visited Korea as part of the Me & Korea Mosaic Tour with other Korean adoptees interested in learning about their roots and Korean culture. There I met Bella from 325KAMRA, a non-profit that helps Korean adoptees

find their birth families. She encouraged tour members to submit DNA to the genetic testing company, FamilyTreeDNA, and start a birth parent search. I'd met others in the group who had found family, which gave me some hope I'd never had. I also submitted DNA to 23andMe and Ancestry. (Mellor 160)

Moreover, internationalization and technological advancements have enabled adoptees to create online communities to share emotional support, practical information, and scientific and historic knowledge among themselves. The online space promotes collaboration of ideas, experiences, and goals, and facilitates the maintenance of the Korean adoptee community. In addition to 325KAMRA, current DNA- and adoption-centric groups on Facebook include "KAD 23andme Results Group", "DNA Tested Korean Adoptee's and Korean War Veterans and Their Children", and "Asia Adoption DNA". These exist alongside general adoption interest groups that include posts on DNA technologies (Kopacz 347). Rounds explains that she acquired information on the history of Korean international adoptions through social media:

Around the time I submitted my DNA, I stumbled upon different adoptee groups on Facebook that I had no idea existed. It was the first time I realized how many others were just like me! Connecting with them taught me about the history and heritage we all share. Since the time of the Korean War, I learned that an estimated 240,000 Korean children had been relinquished for international adoption. I also learned that mixed-race kids were a source of embarrassment for a purist nation. (Rounds 68)

#### Sense of Closure and Peace—and Truth

Sometimes, finding any information about their birth or biological family gives adoptees a sense of closure and peace. In 2016, Lisa Jackson learned about her biological father through paternal cousins she found through DNA testing. Later, as she learned about her past, she felt a sense of closure and peace:

To know that my parents lived together for 11 months before I was born, and that they had planned a future, and I was going to be a part of that—it was such bittersweet news. But having that information was also priceless because I now have closure about my past in Korea. To have the information that DNA was able to provide was more than I could have ever hoped for. It has blessed me

with peace after 48 years. (Jackson 7)

Although several Korean parents had relinquished their children for international adoption, many Korean children, who had gone missing, were found and sent for adoption by adoption agencies without their parents' knowledge or consent. DNA testing has been helpful for Korean parents whose children have long been missing. Laurie Bender was born in South Korea and adopted to the U.S. in 1976. In 2019, she reunited with her biological parents and two siblings in Korea, only to learn that her parents had not relinquished her for adoption, but she had gone missing and the police had taken her to an orphanage:

Umma (mother) had not only gone to the orphanage looking for me; the family had also distributed flyers all over Korea in search of me. She had been on television searching and had joined parent groups that also had missing children in the hopes that she might find me. In 2016, when 325KAMRA was in Korea, they were on a television program that talked about free DNA kits for searching families. Umma rushed to Seoul to DNA-test with them, and it was her testing, and 325KAMRA collecting her DNA and contact information, that allowed me to have an instant match with my mother on yet a third DNA platform. (Bender 52)

# **Not All Happy-Ending Stories**

Anna Childers categorized the emotions experienced after DTC-GT among adoptees into five categories: obsession with new connections; a feeling of a newfound direction in the search for more information; frustration; disappointment; and happiness (Childers 25). Korean adoptees' experiences with newly found connections through DNA testing are not necessarily "happy-endings." Many biological family members or new family members of biological parents refuse to accept relationships found through DNA testing or do not respond to adoptees' attempts to reconnect. Susie Whitford Hankinson, born in Korea, was adopted to the U.S. as a baby and raised in San Diego, California. Through DNA testing and genealogical research, she identified her biological father in 2017. She discovered that her father had passed away, and her half-siblings did not respond to her messages to reconnect, making her feel rejected:

The process of finding birth family was exciting for me at first, but then

disclosing the news of an unknown family member to total strangers is a delicate, arduous process, a responsibility that fell completely on the shoulders of 325KAMRA. To this day there's been no response. The Patton (biological father's) family's apathy felt like rejection and was painfully hard to understand. (Hankinson 22)

## Revealing Mother's Secrets, Shame, and Guilt

Reunions can be emotionally challenging for biological parents as well, tapping into strong feelings of separation, guilt, and loss in addition to confronting issues that may have been long-buried or kept secret from spouses or other family members. Biological family members may not want to be found, and contact does not always lead to immediate acceptance or a relationship. Katherine Kim was born in South Korea in 1957 to a Korean mother who relinquished her for adoption when she was two years old. In 2019, she connected with a maternal half-sibling, which led her to her biological mother, now living in the U.S.—her biological mother refused to meet her. Kim "knew Korean mothers carried shame and guilt over the children they relinquished. And they often kept these stories secret for fear of judgement or rejection by others" (39). Kim already had the DNA proof, but her mother refused to meet her.

These searches also raise ethical issues about uncovering the identities of people who wish to remain anonymous, which often lead to emotional complications. Complex emotions are aroused when take-to-the-grave secrets are revealed. Today, DNA services connect all genetically related people, which has changed the level of privacy previously afforded to biological parents. If a biological parent's relative is registered with a DNA service, the service can match the relative with an adoptee, which can eventually lead to the biological parents (Bahrampour, "DNA's New 'Miracle"").

Fortunately, Kim talked at length with her biological mother's husband, and thanks to his mediation, her mother finally acknowledged that she was Kim's mother. Giving birth to a child and then relinquishing her for adoption was a painful secret, which Kim personified:

Her (mother's) giving birth to me and giving me up was a secret she was willing to take to her grave. She had buried her past 60 years earlier, and I represented a painful time in her life she wanted to forget. She didn't abort me because my GI father had promised to marry her, which of course he didn't. When she had asked his family for help, they didn't provide any. She was hurt and angry and decided to relinquish me. (K. Kim 40)

Reunions not only provide adoptees a sense of closure and information about their origin, biological parents, and cultural heritage, but also offer biological parents the opportunity to understand and explain the circumstances under which they had parted from their child. Eventually, Kim's mother opened up and restarted her relationship with her daughter. Kim shared that since the reunion, she has learned a lot about her mother's life and Korean history.

I've learned so much more of my mother's story and have a greater understanding of Korean history through her. I know about her own trauma, living in Okinawa until the end of World War II, living through the Korean War and being raised by a stepmother, and leaving home at an early age to work near the military camps. (K. Kim 41)

#### **Discussion and Conclusions**

Kang examines memoires and recollections written by mixed-race Koreans and analyzes how mono-racial Koreans' prejudiced behaviors affected the authors (1). While memoires describe one's intimate experiences, akin a confession, the authors also attempt to communicate with or seek empathy from the readers. The decision to include or exclude a topic is the authors' prerogative (Kang 6). Similarly, this anthology, Together at Last, not only includes intimate narratives of search for one's origin but also showcases the possibilities, benefits, and achievements of new technologies impacting adoptees' lives and human relations. The volume contains childhood memories of transnational Korean adoptees in Korea before adoption, their post-adoption experiences in the U.S., their motivations for finding their biological family via DNA testing, and the impact of reunion with the biological family on their identities and family relations. The anthology presents how human identity is formed and confirmed in everyday life through scientific verification. The narratives and experiences of Korean adoptees raise philosophical and ethical questions about how the body itself is involved in the construction of human identity. The technology of genome mapping, the Internet, and the dogged persistence of the searchers are the common themes in these stories of finding lost or new family members (Vickery, "Stories of Family Seekers).

It is a natural desire for transnational adoptees in societies of different races to know about their biological parents, relatives, or compatriots. As a result of adoptees' search for their roots, a sense of belonging, trust in oneself, and completeness can be generated. However, the results or ramifications of finding one's biological family through DNA testing are not always positive. However, a few points must be considered. In South Korea, genetic information from a centralized DNA database is mainly used to search for missing children or families separated between North and South Koreas, and for criminal investigation purposes. However, consumer DNA testing is more prevalent and more actively conducted for diagnostic and testing purposes in the U.S. Consequently, there is a higher possibility that adoptees find relatives of biological fathers who returned to the U.S. after serving in Korea, than relatives of biological mothers. Moreover, there is no single consolidated database that is widely available to both Korean biological parents and overseas Korean adoptees (McDermott, "Adopted Koreans"). The South Korean police collect DNA samples from their national databases of missing people. Adoptees and biological parents are eligible to submit DNA samples to this database, and many do, but not nearly enough (McDermott, "Adopted Koreans"). Some international adoptees demand that the Korean government create a specialized DNA databank to find family members of international adoptees and support them more actively in their searches and reunions. There are contrasting viewpoints in this respect, and it is necessary to critically examine both the utopian and dystopian perspectives on scientific and technological progresses, as well as the ethical perspective, on a global scale. Careful handling of DNA information is a major social concern in Korea because this highly sensitive and private biometric information, which is unique to each individual, can predict future health conditions, and, therefore, its misuse can lead to negative consequences (B. Kim 14).

However, some biological parents may not want to be identified. Unlike most of the authors in the anthology, the same could be true for adoptees for whom an uninvited reintroduction to their biological family could be a complicated and unwelcome intrusion (Bahrampour, "DNA's New 'Miracle""). As described in the anthology, even when biological parents are identified via DNA testing, a few of them are reluctant to meet or associate with their children, and some even deny the existence of any relinquished child. Regarding the process of international adoptions, biological parents may want anonymity and confidentiality, and conversely, adoptees may want to find or learn about their real parents. These opposing desires may often conflict with each other.

Genetic technologies help adoptees discover the identity of their biological family, even though their real parents themselves do not undergo any test. The privacy of such parents is no longer protected because DNA-testing-related websites reveal identifying information (Baffer 170). Attorney Bryn Baffer argues that modern genetic technology has negated the right to anonymity of biological parents (163). In this situation, there should be a balance between the psychological needs of adoptees to learn about their biological parents and the latter's social need for privacy. He recommends that if a biological parent does not wish to be contacted, even if a family name and medical history are provided to an adoptee, he/she shall not contact such a parent (Baffer 171-172).

Despite these concerns, it should be noted that intercountry, transracial adoption is a serious issue in which children are involuntarily separated from their country and ethnic heritage as well as from their biological parents and family. Many adoption professionals contend that it is a basic human right to search and learn about oneself ("Searching for Birth Relatives"). The anthology is meaningful because it discusses the less-known transnational and current experiences of overseas Korean adoptees. It is expected that candidly and intimately narrated stories may contribute to a better understanding of Korean transnational adoptees and inspire other adoptees to search for their biological parents via DNA tests to restore their past and solidify their identity.

#### **Works Cited**

- Ahn, Jae Jin and Ji Sung Kwon. "Factors Influencing Korean International Adoptee's Search for Their Birthparents." Korean Journal of Social Welfare Studies 4 (2010): 369-393.
- Baffer, Bryn. "Closed Adoption: An Illusory Promise to Birth Parents and the Changing Landscape of Sealed Adoption Records." Catholic U Journal of Law and Technology 2 (2020): 147-174.
- Bahrampour, Tara. "DNA's New 'Miracle': How Adoptees Are Using Online Registries to Find their Blood Relatives." The Washington Post. 12 October 2016. 4 October 2021. Available at: https:// www.washingtonpost.com/local/social-issues/dnas-new-miracle-how-adoptees-are using-onlineregistries-to-find-their-blood-relatives/2016/10/12/10433fec-8c48-11e6-bf8a-3d26847eeed4 story.html
- Bender, Laurie. "Putting Back Together a Life Gone Missing." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020, 47-53.
- Cannon, Paul Lee, et al. eds. Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020.
- Childers, Anna. Adoptees' Experiences with Direct-to-Consumer Genetic Testing: Emotions, Satisfaction, and Motivating Factors. 2013. University of South Carolina, Master degree thesis.
- Clement, Thomas Park. "Finding Connections in Supporting Those Searching." Together at Last:

- Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 1-3.
- Doolan, Yuri. "Foreword." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. XIV-XXII.
- Dore, Bhavya. "Despite Mixed Results, South Asian Adoptees Turn to DNA Tests." Quartz. 20 October 2020. 10 October 2021. Available at: https://qz.com/1919511/despite-mixed-results-south-asianadoptees-turn-to-dna-tests.
- Futrell, Lisa. "My Cousin Became My Brother." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 24-35.
- Jackson, Lisa. "The Healing Power of Closure." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 4-9.
- Jeong, Sangwoo and Minsol Lee. "Promotion of Human Rights through Support for the Search for Relatives of Overseas Adoptees." Cultural Exchange and Multicultural Education 3 (2020): 1-24.
- Hankinson, Susie Whitford. "Chickens in My DNA." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 18-23.
- Kang, Jin-goo. "Korean Society's Recognition of Mixed-Bloods Focusing on the Notes of People of Mixed Blood." Woori Literature Research 26 (2009): 155-187.
- Kim, Byoung Soo. "Socio-ethical Issues of Genetic Identification Technology." Bioethics 6.1 (2005):
- Kim, Cerrissa. "Koreans & Camptowns: Reflections of a Mixed-Race Korean." KoreanAmericanStory. org. 4 November 2015. 4 October 2021. Available at: http://koreanamericanstory.org/written/theconference-that-introduced-me-to-the-legacy-of being-a mixed-race-korean
- Kim, Dae Joong. "Adoption and Ethico-Ontology in the Era of Post-Diaspora." Journal of English Cultural Studies 8.3 (2015): 7-27.
- Kim, Katherine. "Misfortune to Fortune." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 36-41.
- King, Blair. "History I Never Had Before." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 203-210.
- Kopacz, Elizabeth. "From Contingent Beginnings to Multiple Ends: DNA Technologies and the Korean

- Adoptee 'Cousin'." Adoption & Culture 6.2 (2018): 336-352.
- Kuek, Florence and Ling Tek Soon. "Autobiography and Ethical Literary Criticism." Interlitteria 22.2 (2017): 282-296.
- Lee, Mi Sun. "Factors influencing the self-identity of Korean overseas Adoptees." Journal of the Korean Society of Child Welfare 14 (2002): 114-44.
- McDermott, Marie Tae. "Adopted Koreans, Stymied in Search of Birth Parents, Find Hope in a Cotton Swab." The New York Times. 27 August 2016. 30 October 2021. Available at: https://www. nytimes.com/2016/08/28/world/asia/south-korea-adoptees-325kamra.html
- Mellor, Sharon. "Answering the Questions in My Heart." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 159-163.
- Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Basic Theory and Terminology." International Journal of Diaspora & Cultural Criticism 5.1 (2015): 58-80.
- Oh, Hyejin and Yooncheol Choi. "A Study on the Acquisition of Nationalities of International Korean Adoptees." Soong Sil Law Review 47 (2020): 765-799.
- Rounds, Linda Papi. "Completing the Picture of a Life in Black and White." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 67-72.
- "Searching for Birth Relatives." Child Welfare Information Gateway. May 2018. 15 October 2021. Available at: https://www.childwelfare.gov/pubpdfs/f search.pdf.
- Shin, Inseop and Jinhyoung Lee. "Introduction: The Humanities in the Age of High Mobility." Mobility Humanities 1.1 (2021): 1-5.
- Thornton, Tim. "In My Father's Footsteps." Together at Last: Stories of Adoption and Reunion in the Age of DNA, edited by Paul Lee Cannon, Nancy Lee Blackman, Cerrissa Kim, Katherine Kim and Linda Papi Rounds. Bloomington, Indiana: Thomas & Wonsook Foundation, 2020. 10-17.
- Yoon, In-Jin. Immigration History of the Global Korean Diaspora. Seoul: Nanam, 2013.
- Vickery, Martha. "Stories of Family Seekers." Korean Quarterly. April 2020. 30 October 2021. Available at: https://www.koreanquarterly.org/books/stories-of-family-seekers/

# 文学伦理学批评关键词:伦理身份

# **Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Identity**

蒋文颖 (Jiang Wenying)

内容摘要: 伦理身份是文学伦理学批评理论的核心术语之一,指人在社会中存在的标识。不同于西方哲学传统中的同一性或文化研究和社会心理学中的身份认同,伦理身份具有客观性和非本质性的特点。伦理禁忌是人类社会最重要的伦理秩序,而伦理身份是伦理禁忌存在的基础。此外,伦理身份与伦理选择之间有着密切关系。它既是伦理选择的前提和依据,也是伦理选择的结果。文学作品通过对人物伦理身份和伦理选择的深入刻画,提供伦理启示,实现其道德教诲的基本功能与核心价值。

关键词: 伦理身份; 伦理选择; 伦理禁忌; 身份建构

作者简介: 蒋文颖, 华中师范大学外国语学院讲师, 主要从事欧美戏剧研究。本文系教育部人文社科项目(青年基金项目)"易卜生戏剧的现代伦理思想研究"【项目批号: 18YJC760031】和国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号: 19ZDA292】的阶段性成果。

Title: Keyword of Ethical Literary Criticism: Ethical Identity

**Abstract:** Ethical identity is one of the key terms of ethical literary criticism, which refers to the marking position of an individual in human society. Different from identity in traditional western philosophy and that in cultural studies or social psychology, ethical identity is objective and nonessential. Ethical taboos are the most important ethical order of human society, and ethical identity is the existential element of ethical taboos. In addition, ethical identity is interrelated with ethical choice, since it is both the result and premise of ethical choice. Literature elaborately portrays the ethical identities of and ethical choices made by the characters, so as to provide ethical revelation and achieve its basic function and core value of moral education.

**Keywords:** ethical identity; ethical choice; ethical taboos; identity construction **Author: Jiang Wenying** is Lecturer of English Department, Central China Normal University (Wuhan, Hubei 430079). Her research interest is European and American drama (Email: sophiajwy@foxmail.com).

英文 identity 的词源是拉丁文 idem, 意思是 "same" (同一性、一致性)。 在汉语中 identity 有三种常见的翻译,分别是同一性、身份认同和身份。同 一性尤其是人格同一性(personal identity)是西方形而上学的传统问题,有 着悠久的研究历史。身份认同是近些年在社会科学尤其是文化研究和心理学 研究中受到关切的问题。相比于"同一性"和"身份认同", "身份"一词 则更为常见,在日常生活、法律、政治、经济等领域被广泛使用。通过梳理 identity 的词源和主要研究领域的理论主张不难发现,关于 identity 讨论的始 终围绕人如何保持同一。与同一性和身份认同有所不同, 文学伦理学批评中 的伦理身份是"一个人在社会中存在的标识,人需要承担身份所赋予的责任 与义务"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》263)。伦理身份是维护伦理秩 序的基础,具有客观性。它既是伦理选择的前提和依据,也是伦理选择的结果。 伦理身份的建构和解构要通过伦理选择来实现。

# 一、同一性、身份认同与伦理身份

从词源的首要含义出发,identity一词并不专属于人的讨论。"作为名词 的'identity'只关乎事物与自身而非与其他事物之间的关系"(Shoemaker, "Identity & Identities"), 它是决定一个事物是它自身的特征和属性,或是其存 在的基本条件。同一性/认同/身份(identity)是事物与自身的等同关系,具有 反射性,并且只要事物存在,它的identity就会一直存在,具有时间上的持续 性。因此,identity的词义本身带有本质论的倾向和形而上学的特点。人在开 始思考"我是谁"这个问题时也始终伴随"我如何在时间中保持同一"的追 问,这成为了西方哲学领域中古老的命题,即人格同一性。从亚里士多德到笛 卡尔,人的理性一直被视为人的同一性的本质属性,而洛克在此基础上加入 了人的记忆,但仍然是本质主义的立场。 '经过漫长的发展,哲学领域对人格 同一性的讨论逐渐从形而上学的本体论实现了"实践转向"(高新民 罗岩超 127),加强了与人的现实需要和生活之间的联系。在文化研究领域,身份认 同的一个关键问题是身份是否是本质的,亦或是流动的、生成的。与identity词 源以及形而上学传统中的同一性本质论不同,文化研究的学者们更加倾向于认 为身份是流动的而非本质的。霍尔(Stuart Hall)承认identity在概念上的矛盾 和含混。他用德里达的解构主义视角分析了这种矛盾出现的原因在于一些概念 十分重要,但是它们的传统意义(如identity指稳定的、具有本质属性的同一 性)已经不再适用于当下的研究范式和社会语境,在尚未出现能够完全取而代 之的新概念之前人们不得不继续使用它们。2

<sup>1</sup> See Florian Coulmas, Identity: A Very Short Introduction, Oxford: Oxford UP, 2019, 9. 洛克认为人 格同一性在于意识的连续性,参见约翰·洛克:"同一性与多样性",《人类理解论》(上册), 关文运译, 北京: 商务印书馆, 1983年, 第301-324页。

<sup>2</sup> See Stuart Hall, "Introduction: Who Needs Identity?" Questions of Cultural Identity, edited by Stuart Hall and Paul du Gay, London: SAGE Publications, 1996, 1-2.

身份的提出有着特殊时代背景。20世纪由于战争、资本主义工业发展以 及各种政治和社会原因导致世界范围内人口的大量流动,人们离开出生成长 的地域,流入新的国家或地区,从而面临文化身份的认同问题。1在脱离了孕 育某种文化的天然的地理和人文环境的情况下,身份认同从个体认同走向集 体认同,"主要指某一文化主体在强势与弱势文化之间进行的集体身份选择, 由此产生了强烈的思想震荡和巨大的精神磨难,其显著特征,可以概括为一 种焦虑与希冀、痛苦与欣悦并存的主体体验"(陶家俊 38)。文化研究领域 中身份的流动性其实是人的主观体验的流动性和非本质性,是对集体身份进 行选择时产生的情感和思想的不确定性和易变性。身份认同是身份主体的内 部复杂的精神体验,造成这种体验的原因是多重的,其中一个重要因素是空 间的变化。福柯是文化研究的主要思想资源之一,他在"别样的空间"("Des Espace Autres", 1967) 一文中指出, 在 20 世纪虽然时间的维度没有被完全抛 弃,但是分散(dispersed)、并置的(juxtaposed)空间成为人们进行思考和 理论建构的基本视域(horizon),构成人的基本生命体验。<sup>2</sup>从这个角度来看, 文化研究中的身份认同从传统哲学领域中由时间维度主导的持存性、同一性 转向了空间维度。虽然与作为哲学问题的同一性有所不同,但究其根本,身 份认同仍然是在追问"自我",探究人在不同国家、地区、民族、语言、宗 教等杂糅语境中的一致性。

社会心理学同样关心人如何认识自我(the self)的问题。在其两个重要 的理论领域,身份认同理论(identity theory)和社会身份认同理论(social identity theory)中,自我都具有反射性,它能将自身视为客体,在与其他社 会种属或类别中将自身进行归类或用特定的方式命名。身份认同理论家称其 为"确认(identification)",而社会身份认同理论家将这一过程称为"自我 归类(self-categorization)"(Stets and Burke 224)。它们分别从不同的理论 出发点阐释人对自我的认识。身份认同理论着眼于个体在社会中扮演的角色, 个体通过认识到自己与其他个体所扮演的角色之间的差异来确定自己的位置, 明白自己与他人的关系,以此来实现身份认同。社会身份认同理论认为生活 在集体社会中个体的身份早已被预设,脱胎于个体身处的社会结构,因而个 体进行自我归类的过程要受到社会/群体的制约。自我归类的过程是在认识 论层面寻找"我是谁";身份确认的过程是厘清"我要做什么",指向个体 的实践经验层面。

无论是最古老的形而上学到现代哲学中的同一性,还是文化研究和社会 心理学领域中的身份认同问题,都有两个相同之处。一是这些讨论都关心 个人的内部经验和主观意识,最终回归到"自我认同"的问题上,即我如

<sup>1</sup> 参见 阎嘉:"身份/认同",《文化研究关键词》,汪民安编,南京:江苏人民出版社,2020年, 第 328 页。

<sup>2</sup> See Michel Foucault, "Of Other Spaces," translated by Jay Miskowiec, *Diacritics* 16.1 (1986): 22.

何认识我自己或感受自我的存在。自我的反射性始终是西方学界中身份研 究的核心议题。二是这些讨论都没有脱离 identity 一词的词源("same"), 都是关于主观自我在时间和空间上的持存性和一致性,无论这种一致性的 存在条件来自人自身内部还是外部社会。而汉语的"身份"在一般意义上 是指一个人在社会中的地位。延伸到法律意义上,身份是指"自然人在一 定社会组织体系中所形成的稳定关系中所处的地位",具有"相对的稳定 性和依存性"1。从这两个意思来看,"身份"并不强调个人的主体经验, 而是侧重它的标识功能,明确人在一个秩序或与他人的关系中所处的位置。 它与其他身份相互依存,并且社会秩序不发生变化的情况下具有稳定性。在 中国历史上、尤其是在封建制社会中、身份与社会等级秩序有着密不可分 的关系。在科举制之前人的出身基本决定了人的社会地位,权力与资源分 配都与此有关。为维护社会秩序的伦理道德也由此产生,如儒家思想中的"三 纲五常"。汉语"身份"的词义、历史沿革和文化内涵与西方学界讨论的 identity 有很大差异。

伦理身份是文学伦理学批评理论的核心术语之一,其中"身份"一词沿 袭了汉语的基本词义。伦理身份概念的核心不是向内探究"我是谁"、"自我" 是什么,而是用伦理的尺度来确定身份主体在社会中的位置。由于社会生活 的复杂多样,人往往身处于多重伦理关系之中,具有多重伦理身份,在一定 程度上与社会心理学身份认同理论中的"角色"相近。但是伦理身份并不是 意识活动的"自我归类",而是伦理选择的结果,这一点将在本文第三部分 加以解释。人对自身已经具有的伦理身份认同与否、有着怎样的主观体验并 不改变人具有某个伦理身份的事实, 也不能改变伦理身份主体要承担的责任 和义务。

#### 二、伦理身份与伦理禁忌

"伦理身份与伦理禁忌和伦理秩序密切相关。从人类文明发展的角度来 看,人类社会的伦理秩序的形成与变化从制度上说都是以禁忌为前提的"(聂 珍钊 王松林,"总序(一)"12)。伦理禁忌代表着人类社会的道德底线和原则, 它规定了伦理身份所赋予的最基本的责任和义务。对伦理禁忌的考察可以揭 示作为构成要素的伦理身份如何维护伦理秩序。以血缘为基础的先天的伦理 身份是人最初始的伦理身份,以此为基础的乱伦禁忌是人类社会最初的伦理 禁忌。恩格斯在《家庭、私有制和国家的起源》(Der Ursprung der Familie, des Privateigenthums und des Staats, 1884) —书中详细论述了人类家庭形态的 演变,其中乱伦禁忌有着举足轻重的意义。在人类原始社会中,家庭的第一

<sup>1</sup> 参见魏振瀛、徐学康、郭明瑞主编:《北京大学法学百科全书:民法学·商法学》,北京: 北京大学出版社, 2004年, 第835页。

阶段表现形式为血缘家庭 1。在这个阶段,"婚姻集团按照辈分来划分"(恩 格斯 37),同一辈分之内的男女互为夫妻。即使是在这种群体婚姻的血缘家 庭中, 性在代际之间也被严格禁止。由此可见, 人类社会在尚未完成伦理选择、 伦理意识尚未完全成熟的历史阶段已经形成了乱伦禁忌。

文学作品中对乱伦禁忌的呈现可以追溯到古希腊悲剧这一古老的文学体 裁。文学伦理学批评实践中已对经典古希腊悲剧如《俄狄浦斯王》以及由尤 金·奥尼尔(Eugene O'Neill)改编自埃斯库罗斯《俄瑞斯忒亚》的《悲悼》 (Mourning Becomes Electra, 1931) 三部曲中的乱伦禁忌做出了细致的研究和 论述。2 乱伦禁忌是人类社会最重要也是最严格的伦理秩序,由乱伦禁忌引发 戏剧冲突的情节设置在古今中外的经典作品中不胜枚举。中国现代戏剧受到 西方现代戏剧影响而兴起,比如《雷雨》就是以蘩漪与周萍、周萍与四凤之 间的乱伦关系为戏剧冲突,以彻底的家庭悲剧呈现了触犯乱伦禁忌的严重后 果。在《雷雨》中,蘩漪与周萍虽然不是亲生母子,但他们建立了现实伦理 中的母子关系,这与以先天血缘为基础的母子关系同等有效,同样受到道德 约束。他们在明确知晓各自的伦理身份的情况下发生了乱伦,导致悲剧结局。 对蘩漪而言,与周萍的乱伦关系是她对现实伦理秩序的反抗,也是她对抗沉 闷和压抑的婚姻生活的方式。即使她的动机和处境能够引发同情,也不能改 变她触犯乱伦禁忌的事实。周萍是她的继子,他们的私情触碰了伦理道德的 底线。周萍同样被这段关系所折磨,无法克服心中的道德负罪感。由此可见, 伦理身份是构成伦理禁忌的前提条件,是否触犯伦理禁忌是以伦理身份为判 断标准和依据。对身份所赋予的责任与义务的遵守是维护伦理秩序的途径和 方式。

除乱伦禁忌之外,文学作品中呈现的其他伦理禁忌同样反映伦理身份 在维系伦理秩序方面起到的重要作用。莎士比亚的经典悲剧《李尔王》的情 节副线与主线相呼应,并以弑父禁忌为伦理结展开。李尔的两个女儿对父不 敬,甚至起了杀心。奥本尼公爵说道:"要是上天不立刻降下一些明显的灾 祸来惩罚这种万恶的行为,惩罚总是会来的,人类一定会自相吞食,像深海 的海怪一样了"(莎士比亚77)。奥本尼的警告说明弑父行为是危害人类生 存繁衍的伦理禁忌,要受到"天谴"一般的严厉惩罚。私生子埃德蒙因不满 意父亲葛罗斯特伯爵对自己轻视,而记恨拥有合法身份的哥哥埃德加,并构 陷埃德加试图杀害父亲。埃德蒙捏造谎言时说到"惩凶的神明是要用全部天 雷轰击弑父的逆子的",称埃德加的企图是"违背天性的图谋"(莎士比亚

根据恩格斯的研究,原始社会家庭从低级到高级的形式演变是血亲家庭、普那路亚家庭、 对偶制家庭到专偶制家庭。这四种家庭形态的演变就是近亲之间性的限制逐渐扩展,乱伦禁忌 逐渐明确的过程,同时也是母系氏族的兴起到瓦解,逐渐被父亲氏族取代的过程。参见 恩格斯: 《家庭、私有制和国家的起源》,北京:人民出版社,2018年,第28-90页。

<sup>2</sup> 对《俄狄浦斯王》及《悲悼》三部曲中伦理禁忌问题的详细论述,参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦 理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第175-185页、第217-223页。

34)。埃德蒙用"违背天性"(unnatural)指控哥哥,反映了在当时的伦理环 境之中父子之间存在着一种自然的秩序和内在规律,一旦遭到破坏会招致严 重的后果。向来被父亲厌恶的私生子埃德蒙利用弑父的伦理禁忌成功地离间 了葛罗斯特与埃德加, 佯装出忠孝美德以蒙蔽父亲并赢得他人赞誉。莎士比 亚的另一部悲剧《麦克白》以英雄勇士麦克白触犯弑君篡位的伦理禁忌为核 心展开。引发这场悲剧的原因在于麦克白具有僭越伦理身份的野心,没有恪 守作为臣子的伦理责任。麦克白夫人也同样如此。他们对权力欲望不加节制, 在自由意志的驱使下做出触犯伦理禁忌的行为,选择用残暴疯狂的手段,通 过残害更多无辜的人来巩固用非法手段夺来的王权。然而在权力欲望得到满 足之后,他们非但不能平静地享受这份至高的权力,反而愈加难以控制自己 的恐惧和猜疑。折磨他们的正是他们自身的伦理意识,他们清楚地知晓弑君 的行为触犯了伦理禁忌。

值得一提的是,伦理身份对伦理秩序的维护作用与身份的主体是否在主 观意识上认同身份、是否对自身行为有道德悔悟无关。触犯伦理禁忌的行为 和事实不会因为当事人是否自觉而改变。《雷雨》中周萍在不知情的情况下 与亲生妹妹四凤触犯了乱伦禁忌。在得知对方的真实身份之后,羞愤难当的 四凤在雷雨中触电而死,一向怯懦的周萍也因无法承受真相而开枪自尽。这 与《俄狄浦斯王》中天降瘟疫的诅咒有着相似的道德隐喻,预示着自然对违 背人伦底线行为的最严厉惩罚。可见,由于伦理身份的客观性是它能够维护 伦理秩序的基础条件,所以触犯伦理禁忌的行为不会因为当事人没有确认身 份或表现出道德忏悔而得到宽恕。

## 三、伦理身份与伦理选择

文学伦理学批评中的伦理身份概念具有客观性, 但是这种客观性既不是一 种本质论,也没有排斥人的主观意识和情感体验与伦理身份之间的密切关系, 更加没有否定人作为身份主体具有认识、理解伦理身份以及建构和解构伦理身 份的主观能动性。伦理身份是伦理选择的结果,也是人进行伦理选择的前提和 依据。伦理身份的建构和解构都是通过伦理选择来实现。人在进行伦理选择时 必然会有意志的参与,会产生主观的情感体验。从伦理身份的起源上来看,人 成为身份的主体是作为历史阶段的伦理选择(ethical selection)的结果,也是 人类获得伦理意识, 从最初的伦理混沌进入到文明社会的标志。 人是斯芬克斯 因子的存在,人性因子是人区别于其他物种的基本特征,道德属性是人的根本 属性。但是人的道德属性并不是先天存在或固有的、不变的本质,而是在人类 社会中通过不断进行具体的伦理选择(ethical choice)而习得的。

莎士比亚在《李尔王》中深入探究了何以为人这一根本性问题,也充分 展现了伦理身份的非本质性。年迈的古不列颠国王李尔决定将他的土地、财 产以及至高无上的王权分给三个女儿,分配的依据是她们自述对他的敬爱的 程度。作为一国之君的国王,李尔提出的建议实际解构了他的伦理身份,一 旦将权力和财产分配出去,他将无须承担作为国王的责任和义务。而且,李 尔提出的分配标准缺乏审慎和严谨性,因而无法保证分配结果公平。被驱逐 出宫廷的李尔无法理解女儿的背叛,丧失理性,进入疯癫暴怒的状态。他不 停地从起源上追问"人是什么",他感叹道: "只有你保全着原形;没有文 明装饰的人不过是像你这样一个寒伧的、赤裸的、两条腿的动物"(莎士比 亚 61)。这里的"原形"是指人的原始外形,即人经过自然选择之后获得的 外在形式。"文明装饰"在字面上是指衣物,但"文明"一词的深层意义指 向了作为文明社会中的人的身份。衣物的出现不仅出于保暖的功能性需要, 证明了人的劳动创造力和主观能动性,而且体现了人类社会的道德羞耻观。 这是将人与其他生物以及原始阶段的人类自身区别开的本质特征。李尔流落 荒原,感悟到没有这层"文明装饰"的人无异于动物。他为"人是什么"这 个问题找寻到的答案是人的道德属性。最终小女儿科迪利娅对李尔的道德之 爱唤回了李尔的理性,使他认识到自己的错误,并通过重建与科迪利娅的伦 理关系使他的父亲身份回位。李尔从失去身份到重获身份的过程是他的人性 因子和道德属性复归的过程。《李尔王》中关于伦理身份的探讨充分说明人 的道德属性必须通过伦理选择来获得。伦理身份的主体是人,但这并不意味 着人的身份是一成不变的。即使是"父亲"这种先天的伦理身份,也需要通 过正确的伦理选择、承担起相应的伦理责任来加以确认和维持。其根本原因 在于人是斯芬克斯因子的存在,人性因子与兽性因子始终在矛盾对立中发生 着动态变化。李尔在非理性意志的支配下做出错误的伦理选择,导致他失去 国王与父亲的伦理身份,甚至失去理智。由此可见,人要在不断进行伦理选 择的过程中逐渐树立并完善自身的伦理意识和道德观念,使人性因子占主导 地位,从而确认并保持自己作为人的伦理身份。

"在文学文本中,所有伦理问题的产生往往都同伦理身份相关"(聂珍 钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》263)。其中人物的主观认知、情感和体验与客 观伦理身份所承载的伦理责任之间的矛盾构成文学作品中伦理问题的重要因 素。身处情感矛盾之中的人物常常无法做出合乎伦理道德规范的伦理选择。 如《雷雨》中的蘩漪,她一方面反复否认她的伦理身份,另一方面仍然保有 传统的家庭观念和阶级观念,不敢选择公然反抗或逃离,而是将脱离婚姻的 希望寄托在周萍身上。虽然蘩漪以及剧中其他人物的伦理悲剧都是他们各自 伦理选择的结果,但是这部悲剧能够引发我们对人物的深刻同情。我们能看 到蘩漪由嫉妒走向疯狂的表象之下是封建专制的婚姻带给她的精神痛苦。 《雷雨》是一出由乱伦引发的家庭伦理悲剧,但是它并不是简单地对"当事 人"进行声讨或谴责,也没有止步于给世人以伦理警示的道德说教上。戏剧 的冲突交织着人物伦理身份和伦理关系的逐渐揭露,达到了高潮迭起的戏剧 效果。揭露真相的过程与人物的立体塑造相辅相成,引导我们对人物做出错

误的伦理选择的原因以及导致的灾难性后果进行反思。文学伦理学批评主张 人要依据伦理身份进行伦理选择,强调伦理身份的客观性并没有否定或忽视 主观意识的重要性。人能够发挥主观能动性对身份进行理性思考和认识,确 定伦理身份所提供和限定的条件来讲行伦理选择。

在客观性和非本质性的基础之上,伦理身份还是具体而多样的。人的社 会生活复杂多样,因此人会身在多重伦理关系之中,拥有多重伦理身份,并 且不同的伦理身份可能会要求同一身份主体进行不同的伦理选择。有时这些 选择会相互矛盾,从而导致身份主体陷入伦理混乱或伦理两难。莎士比亚笔 下的哈姆莱特就是一个典型的案例。1因此人在进行伦理选择时要以承认并尊 重身份的多样性现实为前提,依据具体的情境选择履行具体身份所承载的责 任义务。人的多重身份之间不是非此即彼、相互排斥的关系。人需要经过推 理、反思、审视之后来选择认同或不认同以及如何认同,而不是盲目地"发现" 某种身份,对其不加思索地接受,以至于狭隘地排斥其他身份以及与己不同 身份的人。2

伦理身份存在于具体的伦理关系和伦理秩序之中,是人的标识,也是维 护伦理秩序的基础。不同于西方哲学、文化研究、社会心理学等领域探讨的 同一性或身份认同问题,伦理身份不是在探究人的反射性"自我"、人如何 理解自己, 也不是在回答个人如何在时间和空间的维度上保有持续性、一致性、 同一性,而是强调作为社会的一员,人在不同伦理关系和伦理秩序中需要承 担什么样的责任与义务。这些责任和义务不由个人的意志决定,也不受个人 情感的影响, 而是由社会的伦理秩序和伦理传统来规范和限定。伦理身份具 有显著的客观性,但是它没有否定人的主观能动性。人的伦理身份不是本质 主义的,它可以通过伦理选择进行建构或解构。另外,伦理身份的客观性与 个人的主观意识和体验所形成的对照,能够使我们更加清楚地看到文学作品 中的伦理问题。从文学伦理学批评的角度来看,文学作品就是展现这些伦理 问题形成的过程以及人物在面对各种伦理问题时做出伦理选择的动机、过程 和结果的艺术。结合人物的伦理身份才能正确地分析和评价伦理选择,从中 得出文学的伦理启示和教诲价值。

#### **Works Cited**

Coulmas, Florian. Identity: A Very Short Introduction. Oxford: Oxford UP, 2019.

恩格斯:《家庭、私有制和国家的起源》,中共中央马克思、恩格斯、列宁、斯大林著作编译局译。 北京:人民出版社,2018年。

哈姆莱特与生父之间先天的伦理关系以及他与克劳狄斯建立的父子关系使他具有相互矛盾 的双重伦理身份,从而陷入了复仇或不复仇都将违背伦理秩序的伦理两难之中。参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第130-133页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见阿马蒂亚•森:《身份与暴力:命运的幻象》,北京:中国人民大学出版社,2013年, 第 23-26 页。

- [Engels, Friedrich. The Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State, translated by Central Compilation and Translation Bureau. Beijing: People's Publishing House, 2018.]
- Foucault, Michel. "Of Other Spaces." Translated by Jay Miskowiec. Diacritics 16.1 (1986): 22-27.
- 高新民、罗岩超: "人格同一性研究的伦理学转向与人的生活回归",《社会科学研究》 6(2022): 127-134。
- [Gao Xinmin and Luo Yanchao. "The Ethical Turn of Personal Identity Research and the Return of Human Life." Social Science Research 6 (2022): 127-134.]
- Hall, Stuart. "Introduction: Who Needs Identity?" Questions of Cultural Identity, edited by Stuart Hall and Paul du Gay. London: SAGE Publications, 1996. 1-17.
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2014.]
- 聂珍钊、王松林: "总序(一)",《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,聂珍钊、王松林编。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2019年, 第1-19页。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin. "The General Preface I." A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism, edited by Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2019. 1-19.]
- 查尔斯•罗斯、聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评的理论建构: 聂珍钊访谈录", 杨革新译, 《外语 与外语教学》4(2015):75-78。
- [Ross, Charles, and Nie Zhenzhao. "Theoretical Construction of Ethical literary Criticism: An Interview with Nie Zhenzhao." Translated by Yang Gexin. Foreign Languages and Their Teaching 4 (2015): 75-78.]
- 阿马蒂亚•森:《身份与暴力:命运的幻象》,李风华等译。北京:中国人民大学出版社, 2013年。
- [Sen, Amartya. Identity and Violence: The Illusion of Destiny, translated by Li Fenghua, et al. Beijing: China Renmin UP, 2013.]
- 莎士比亚: 《莎士比亚全集》(第六卷),朱生豪译。南京:译林出版社,2016年。
- [Shakespeare, William. The Complete Works of Shakespeare vol. VI, translated by Zhu Shenghao. Nanjing: Yilin Publishing House, 2016.]
- Shoemaker, Sydney. "Identity & Identities." Daedalus 135. 4 (2006): 40+. 9 Dec. 2022. <a href="https://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A154694508/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A15469408/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A15469408/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark-to-thtps://link.gale.com/apps/doc/A15469408/LitRC?u=cnccnu&sid=bookmark LitRC&xid=632573b2>.
- Stets, Jan E. and Peter J. Burke. "Identity Theory and Social Identity Theory." Social Psychology Quarterly 63.3 (2000): 224-237.
- 陶家俊: "身份认同导论", 《外国文学》2(2004): 37-44。
- [Tao Jiajun. "Introduction to Identity." Foreign Literature 2 (2004): 37-44.]
- 阎嘉: "身份/认同",《文化研究关键词》,汪民安编。南京:江苏人民出版社,2020年, 第 326-328 页。
- [Yan Jia: "Identity." Key Words in Cultural Studies, edited by Wang Min'an. Nanjing: Jiangsu People's Publishing House, 2020. 326-328.]

## 《顶尖女子》中的伦理身份与伦理选择 Ethical Identity and Ethical Choice in *Top Girls*

刘茂生(Liu Maosheng) 杨俊婷(Yang Junting)

内容摘要:《顶尖女子》是英国当代戏剧家卡里尔·邱吉尔的代表性作品。 剧本以20世纪80年代英国职场女性生存的伦理环境为背景,聚焦马琳这位 当代职场中"顶尖女子"的伦理身份与选择,书写了英国20世纪80年代英 国职场女性复杂的伦理生活。围绕马琳伦理选择的伦理主线,叙述了马琳的 多重伦理身份引发的伦理困境以及马琳最终做出的伦理选择,强调了伦理身份与其伦理选择具有的不可分割性。邱吉尔的《顶尖女子》通过马琳多重伦 理身份与伦理选择的范例展示当代英国职业女性面临的伦理困境,警示读者 和观众在做出伦理选择时不能忽视身份赋予的伦理责任和义务,给人们提供 了深刻的道德启示。

关键词:卡里尔·邱吉尔;《顶尖女子》;伦理身份;伦理选择;文学伦理 学批评

作者简介: 刘茂生,广东外语外贸大学英语语言文化学院教授,主要研究领域为英美文学、文学伦理学批评、叙事学; 杨俊婷,广东外语外贸大学英语语言文学专业博士研究生,主要研究方向为英美文学与文学伦理学批评。本文系2022年国家社会科学基金重大项目"百年来中外戏剧交流史文献整理与研究"【项目批号: 22&ZD285】、2019年国家社会科学基金重大项目"西方伦理批评的文献整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号: 19&ZD192】的阶段性成果; 本文受广东外语外贸大学阐释学研究院科研项目【项目批号: CSY-2022-02】及广东外语外贸大学研究生科研创新项目【项目批号: 22GWCXXM-011】资助。

Title: Ethical Identity and Ethical Choice in Top Girls

**Abstract:** *Top Girls* is a representative work of contemporary British dramatist Caryl Churchill. Taking contemporary professional women's survival environment in the 1980s Britain as setting, the play focuses on the "top girl" Marlene's ethical identity and ethical choice in contemporary workplace, describing the complex ethical life of British working women in the 1980s. Revolving around the narrative mainline of Marlene's ethical choice, this paper emphasizes the inseparability of ethical identity and ethical choice through illustrating the ethical dilemma caused by Marlene's multiple ethical identities and the ethical choices she finally

made. Churchill's Top Girls shows the ethical dilemma faced by contemporary British professional women through the example of Marlene's multiple ethical identities and ethical choices and warns readers and audiences shoulder the ethical responsibilities and obligations entrusted by identity when making ethical choices, thus providing people with profound moral enlightenment.

**Keywords:** Caryl Churchill; *Top Girls*; ethical identity; ethical choice; ethical literary criticism

Authors: Liu Maosheng is Ph.D. in English literature and Professor of English at the Faculty of English Language and Culture, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies (Guangzhou 510420, China). His research areas cover British and American Literature, Ethical Literary Criticism, Narratology (Email: liumaosheng2004@126. com). Yang Junting is a doctorate candidate in British and American Literature, Guangdong University of Foreign Studies (Guangzhou 510420, China). Her research areas are British and American Literature and Ethical Literary Criticism (Email: yangjuntinggdufs@163.com).

卡里尔·邱吉尔(Caryl Churchill, 1938-)长达五十年的戏剧创作影响 了无数戏剧从业者和戏剧工作者。本尼迪克特•南丁格尔认为她"是所有英 国剧作家中最具独创性、最有天赋的一位"(Nightingale 14)。作为邱吉尔 代表作品之一、《顶尖女子》新颖的叙事手法受到评论家的赞扬,但也因给 观众"造成太多困惑而受到其他人的谴责"(Keyssar 215)。一些批评家认 为,该剧虽然展示了女性通过复制男性等级制最恶劣的特征来建立女性等级 制的不良后果,但"未能提供被定义为'女性拒绝将父权制内化'的女权主 义乌托邦愿景"(Pfaelzer 287),认为"邱吉尔不仅创造了一个凄凉的女性 反乌托邦,而且暗示了女性交流的可能性"(Reif 87)。邱吉尔并不认同那 些认为她"既过于乐观又过于悲观〔……〕还有过于哲学化和审美化,不够 政治化"(Keyssar 215)的指责。本文试图回到该剧发生的历史语境,围绕 马琳的伦理选择这一伦理主线,剖析马琳的多重伦理身份引发的伦理困境以 及马琳最终做出的伦理选择,挖掘其中深刻的伦理内涵。

## 一、伦理环境的历史再现

文学作品的伦理价值有其历史的客观性,对文学作品的分析必须"回 到历史的伦理现场,站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释文学作品,寻找文学 产生的客观伦理原因并解释其何以成立,分析作品中导致社会事件和影响人 物命运的伦理因素,用伦理的观点对事件、人物、文学问题等给以解释,并 从历史的角度作出道德评价"(聂珍钊,"文学伦理学批评:基本理论与术 语"14)。20世纪80年代,英国的社会伦理环境发生了巨大变化。随之而来 的是英国女性社会地位的变化,突出表现在职业、婚姻及家庭等方面。战争 期间,由于劳动力短缺,女性代替男性进入各行各业,并出色地完成了各项 工作。这一经历使女性认识到她们的工作能力并不亚于男性,她们开始不满 足于仅仅成为"贤妻良母"。此外,英国政府的政策也对女性外出工作给予 了支持。1919年, "性别失衡法"规定不能因性别原因妨碍女性工作的权 利。特别是,1960年以来,全球性女权运动的兴起使女性的独立意识再次高 涨,加上第三产业的兴起,英国女性的就业率快速上升。1970年颁布的"同 工同酬法"及"性别歧视法",再次为女性的平等就业提供了保障。职业性 别隔离(sex segregation)现象的改善大大增加了女性获得和男性担任同等职 位的机会,改变了女性的就业结构,越来越多的女性进入到高层次的职业中 去。《顶尖女子》中的马琳就是这一变化的绝佳例证。她凭借自己的努力, 击败男性竞争者, 荣升公司总经理。

表面上看,随着时代的发展,女性对其命运有了多种选择,社会地位不 断提高,能够获得与男性同等的就业机会。然而,战争对英国女性产生的影 响只是暂时性的。"女性的形象和现实的'适当'的角色并没有改变"(Marwick 120)。这一说法看似绝对,却也反映了一种基本的事实。女性就业的迅速增 长使女性在经济上获得了独立,但也伴随着婚姻和家庭生活的变化。进入20 世纪80年代,越来越多的女性开始在职场担任要职。但是,中产阶级出身的 撒切尔夫人登台后重新倡导维多利亚时代的价值观念,倡导女性回归家庭。 显然,这使女性陷入了工作和家庭的两难选择之中。女性为了获得职场上的 成功,不得不在工作和婚姻家庭之中做出选择。

不论历史上不同时期女性所处的伦理环境如何变化,作为女儿、妻子和 母亲,她们始终肩负着其伦理身份所赋予她们的伦理责任。身为"顶尖女子 职业介绍所"总经理,马琳行事果断,作风泼辣,是20世纪80年代英国职 场女性的典型代表。她在职场上的成功是以牺牲家庭和婚姻幸福为代价的。 职位晋升本应得到家人和朋友的祝福,但在庆功宴上,马琳邀请的却是五位"女 鬼"。事实上,马琳选择五位"女鬼"来为自己庆祝,只是因为她们这些所 谓的"成功女性"都有着极其相似的伦理身份。五位"女鬼"分别是来自19 世纪的旅行家伊莎贝拉·伯德(Isabella Bird)、13世纪日本皇室宠妃兼尼姑 二条(Nijo)、虚构的9世纪女扮男装成为教皇的琼(Joan)、16世纪画家 老彼得·勃鲁盖尔 16 世纪画作中的主人公杜勒·格里特(Dull Gret)以及中 世纪乔叟《坎特伯雷故事集》中温顺的妻子格丽泽尔达(Griselda)。她们是 在以男性为主导的历史上得以留下名字的女子,是马琳心目中"成功女性" 的代表。

第一幕中,五位"女鬼"身着属于自己时代和表达身份的服装陆续登场, 形成一副跨越时代的超现实画面。通过将历史上不同时空的"顶尖女子"聚

集起来,邱吉尔看似向读者展示一副跨越地域、民族、阶级和文化的女性成 功景象,实则展现了不同历史时期女性由于伦理身份而经受的悲惨遭遇。不 同时期女性所处的伦理环境得到真实再现,强调了伦理身份与其伦理选择的 不可分割性。显然,邱吉尔不是简单地把史料变成文本,而是通过对历史事 件的再书写,构建了探讨历史与现实的当代文本。

作为维多利亚时代上层阶级女士, 伊莎贝拉在维多利亚固有道德观念 的影响下,已将父权制内化为自己思想的一部分。女儿的伦理身份导致她 凡事需按父亲的意愿行事,视父亲为精神支柱。她时常陷入矛盾:"我渴 望回家,但回家干什么?房子太阴沉(dismal)了"(Naismith and Worrall 108) 。显然,她选择以旅行为借口逃避家庭环境,带给她的却是压抑和痛 苦。第一幕结尾,她发出了呼喊: "啊,多么痛苦!"(139)。二条的一生 也同样充满坎坷。作为宠妃,皇帝就是她的一切,失去皇帝的宠幸就失去了 宫廷生活的意义。因其宠妃的身份,她不能和自己的孩子相见,也从未体验 过母子亲情。在当时社会伦理环境下,作为妻子的二条只能听从夫命。丈夫 死后,她又不得不听从父命,做了尼姑。显然,二条的悲惨遭遇与其妻子和 女儿的伦理身份紧密相关。格里特亲眼目睹自己的孩子相继被杀,母亲的身 份使她决定替儿报仇。她身着围裙,头戴盔甲,带领一众村妇闯入地狱与魔 鬼决斗。琼因女扮男装担任教皇一职而著称于世,但却因生孩子暴露了女性 身份而被乱石砸死,连她刚出生的孩子也不能幸免于难。琼和马琳的对话展 现了当时女性所面临的残酷的生存环境:

琼: 我敢肯定其他教皇都有孩子。

马琳:可他们没有生孩子。

琼: 没错! 我本不该是个女人。女人、孩子和疯子是无法成为教皇 的。(120)

显然, 琼是因其男性身份而成为教皇的, 与女性身份没有关系, 这反映 了父权制社会性别规范对女性教育与职业的限制。格丽泽尔达在婚后近20年 内不断受到侯爵违背人性的考验,不能与孩子相见,但她依然坚称"妻子遵 从丈夫, 天经地义"(129)。尽管格丽泽尔达极力辩解, 但酒后的她还是吐 露了心声: "要是沃尔特(侯爵)没有做那些考验该有多好啊!"(138)格 丽泽尔达因妻子的身份强迫自己按当时的伦理纲常行事,无疑成为了维护当 时社会伦理道德秩序的牺牲品。

这些历史上的"成功女性"都为自己的成功付出了惨痛的代价。五位"女鬼" 以第一人称讲述自己的人生选择故事,让读者和观众得以了解特定历史时期

<sup>1</sup> 本文相关引文均出自 Naismith, Bill and Nick Worrall, eds. Caryl Churchill: Top Girls (London: Methuen Drama, 1991)。下文只标注页码,不再一一说明。文中引用的文本均为笔者所译。

女性更为真实的生存伦理。正如克里泽所观察到的那样,这些女性"仍然锁 定在自己独特的视角中"(Kritzer 14),她们"完全吸收了她们的父权文化, 以至于她们为自己的行为感到极度内疚"(Ammen 88)。 五位"女鬼"的故 事看似独立的叙事线索,实则有着紧密的内在联系,她们讲述的故事都是围 绕家庭和婚姻生活展开并且都与她们的伦理身份相关。以马琳这位当代职场 上的"顶尖女子"为代表,可以探究以其为代表的英国 20 世纪 80 年代职场 女性的伦理身份和伦理选择的关系,挖掘该剧背后深刻的伦理内涵。

## 二、马琳的伦理身份与伦理困境

《顶尖女子》中马琳身上的多种伦理身份,是导致其身陷伦理困境的根 本原因。剧中的马琳既是母亲的女儿,又是公司的总经理,作为职场上的"顶 尖女子",马琳不得不在家庭和事业之间做出选择。由于人的身份是其在社 会中存在的标识,因此个体也需要承担身份所赋予的责任与义务。伦理身份 会对主体的行为产生约束,一旦这些伦理身份之间发生冲突,就会导致伦理 混乱,从而使身份主体陷入伦理困境。在当时的社会伦理环境中,马琳无法 对其在职场和家庭中的身份进行调和,毅然选择做职场的"顶尖女子",最 终因身份导致其陷入职场和家庭的伦理困境。

虽然越来越多的女性在20世纪80年代开始选择在职场担任要职,但女 性在职场的生存绝非易事。为了获得成功,实现经济独立,这些女性都根据 自己的职场身份进行选择。她们虽独立坚强、精明能干,但她们因为自己的 选择逐渐在残酷竞争中消解女性的身份特征,增强了男性身份特征。为了保 住在公司的职位,"顶尖女子"马琳必须遵循职场生存法则。她干劲十足, 与同事竞争职位,并选择保持单身。持续的竞争选择真实反映了当时英国社 会特殊的伦理环境, 离婚率不断上升, 女性对结婚的热情不断减小, 结婚年 龄不断推后。

马琳职场上的"总经理"的身份常导致其陷入伦理困境。作为顶尖女子 职业介绍所的职员,马琳是当代"成功女性"(high flayer)的代表。凭借其 出众的才能,她击败霍华德当上了总经理。霍华德遭受打击住院,他的妻子 来到公司向马琳求情,希望马琳将总经理的职位让给霍华德。在她看来,是 马琳的女性身份导致霍华德病情加重,如果是其他男性当选,霍华德会认为 是正常的。她尽力搏取马琳的同情:"他(霍华德)有家要养,有三个孩子, 这个职位给他才是公平的"(189)。为了维护霍华德的自尊,她还请求马琳 不要将此事告知霍华德。遭到马琳的拒绝后, 基德夫人变了脸色, 指责马琳 不近人情: "你的结局一定很惨。你不正常 (not natural)!" (189) 马琳 虽然表面上对此不以为然,但她无法解决作为职员的职业选择与作为女性的 家庭选择之间所产生的矛盾, 无法消除自己的选择给自己带来的内心痛苦。 马琳为了获得职场上的成功,她没有按照其女儿、妻子和母亲的身份进行选 择,相反在自己的职业选择的基础上形成了自己的伦理观点。她在对珍妮的 面试中说,如果不要孩子,她或许可以找到有前途的工作。为了保住职场地位, 马琳可以选择不要亲情,为了摆脱原生家庭带给她的伤害,她宁愿选择与女 儿和父母断绝关系。

作为家庭生活中的母亲、妻子和女儿,马琳常常陷入伦理困境中。首 先,马琳未婚母亲的身份给她带来生活上的困扰。17岁时,马琳在懵懂无知 的年纪意外怀孕,成为单亲妈妈。为了改变自己的命运,她在生下安吉后便 选择将其留给姐姐乔伊斯抚养,独自一人到伦敦闯荡,最终脱胎换骨,成为 职场上的"顶尖女子"。然而,马琳的内心并不轻松。作为安吉的生母,她 从未感受过母女亲情,从未履行过母亲的伦理责任。马琳深知,一旦选择与 安吉相认,她就必须履行母亲的责任。她的生存困境让她不得不做出放弃作 为母亲的选择。其次,为了保住工作,马琳主动放弃了妻子的伦理身份。在 与乔伊斯的争吵中, 马琳坦白自己曾流产两次, 并称不想要孩子。在她看 来,那些喜欢她这种"顶尖女子"的男性都希望她变成回归家庭的小女人。 马琳不能选择婚姻束缚自己。在职业和婚姻的选择中,她最终还是选择了前 者。最后,为了获得经济独立和摆脱原生家庭的束缚,马琳放弃了作为女儿 的伦理身份,与父母分道扬镳。对马琳来说,父母并未给她带来温暖和关 爱。她甚至称自己的酗酒和有暴力倾向的父亲是"杂种",认为母亲和他结 婚简直是浪费生命。在这样的家庭环境中,马琳萌生了选择离开的念头: "我在13岁时就知道我必须离开,离开他们的家,离开他们,我不会重蹈这 样的覆辙/我不会让他掌控,我要走自己的路"(231)。事实证明,马琳 确实如其所愿,成为了职场上的"顶尖女子",彻底脱离了贫穷和原生家 庭。遗憾的是,事业上获得成功的马琳并没有改变家庭状况,她的母亲依然 生活在父亲的暴力威胁之下,她甚至连自己的女儿都不敢相认。正像乔伊斯 所说,"你(马琳)是一直在前进,但对大多数人来说没有发生任何变化" (231)。显然,母亲、妻子、女儿等多重身份并没有让马琳摆脱伦理困境, 她的最终选择也不能避免其伦理悲剧的发生。

## 三、马琳的多重身份与伦理选择

人的身份具有社会属性, 生活在社会生活中的每一个人往往拥有多重身 份,由此表现出不同的个性特征。作为职场上的"顶尖女子",马琳既精明 能干又心狠手辣。然而,表面风光的马琳却因其多重伦理身份而常常陷入伦 理两难。"文学作品中只要有人物存在,就必然面临伦理选择的问题"(聂 珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》267)。马琳作为母亲、妻子、女儿的多重 身份与其伦理选择交织在一起,推动着剧情的发展。她在家庭与工作之间苦 苦挣扎, 在权衡利弊之后毅然选择了后者, 以其职业身份取代了家庭伦理身 份,成为职场中令人羡慕的"顶尖女子"。正如凯撒尔所说: "马琳是一个 我们必须认真对待的女人,一个我们既不能简单谴责也不能简单崇拜的女人" (Keyssar 215)。马琳虽然获得了经济独立和人身自由,但同时也因其选择 造成了她在工作中孤军奋战,家庭中母女分离、姐妹分歧、父母疏远的后果。

在社会关系层面,作为"顶尖女子职业介绍所"的总经理,马琳理应有 广泛的社交,但是作为职场女强人,马琳视撒切尔夫人为偶像,称其为"坚 强的女士"(229)。她崇尚个人主义,明确表示"我不相信阶级。一个人只 要肯干就没有干不成的"(233),并将这一观点视为自己的工作法典。因职 场中的尔虞我诈,她总是独来独往,与同事也仅为泛泛之交。马琳更是有意 回避家庭这一话题,因为她"从没提到过她的家人"(200)。作为"顶尖女 子",马琳的职场身份决定了她无法与同事保持友好的关系,更无法与家人 亲近。

作为安吉的母亲, 马琳并没有尽到其应尽的责任, 对安吉的成长并无 关心。当她和乔伊斯抱怨对安吉知之甚少时,作为养母的乔伊斯对此颇为不 满: "你不了解她(安吉)又不是我的错,你从来不来看她"(205)。马琳 选择放弃作为母亲的身份,使她的女儿受到伤害。安吉性格中的缺陷不断增 强,她只倾向于和年龄比她小的孩子玩耍,"愚蠢、懒惰、胆小"(233)。 马琳对女儿成长的不利影响显而易见。

马琳总是逃避作为女儿和母亲的责任,这在客观上影响了马琳与乔伊斯的 姐妹亲情。马琳与乔伊斯一见面就剑拔弩张,两人之间的对峙形成了一种萧伯 纳式的辩论格局。乔伊斯痛恨马琳舍弃女儿的无耻行为。在乔伊斯眼里,马琳 自私自利, "除了自己什么也不在乎" (231)。她认为马琳的成功没有任何 意义,因为只有她一个人的成功是没有价值的。乔伊斯将马琳归为以撒切尔夫 人为首的英国保守党一派,称他们都是"道德败坏的杂种"(229)。对于安 吉的抚养问题, 乔伊斯同样对马琳的行为表达了不满, "我不明白你如何能够 离开自己的孩子"(221)。当乔伊斯说出自己为了照顾安吉而导致流产并因 此失去成为母亲的机会时,马琳坦言自己也曾两次产流,因为孩子会影响她事 业的发展。可见,舍弃安吉对马琳来说其实是一个异常艰难的选择。她也曾在 母亲和总经理的身份之间犹豫,但目睹了母亲悲惨的生活的她最终还是决定放 弃母亲的身份,选择成为职场中的"顶尖女子"。马琳所经历的种种选择,正 是个人特定身份影响一个人伦理选择的结果。

"文学伦理学批评要求批评家能够进入文学的历史现场,而不是在远离历 史现场的假自治环境(false autonomy situation)中评价文学"(聂珍钊,"文 学伦理学批评:基本理论与术语"20)。邱吉尔选择以马琳这位职场女性作 为叙述对象,也契合了20世纪80年代英国的国内外形势。邱吉尔在1979年访问 美国时,多次听到女性可以成为商界高管的消息(Aston and Diamond 30), 这为她在剧中设定的情境提供了具体真实的素材。1979年,保守党在大选中获 胜,撒切尔夫人成为英国历史上第一位女首相。她大刀阔斧的改革,创造了所

谓的"撒切尔奇迹"。但撒切尔夫人所倡导的个人主义与其所奉行的政策加重 了社会不公,下层民众怨声载道。英国传统文化精神所倡导的"公平竞争、体 面宽容、承担责任、崇尚互利"(瞿世镜任一鸣15)等观念逐渐消失。马琳 是这一时期英国职场女性的代表。为了获得成功,她必须用男性的成功准则要 求自己,在竞争的压力与职场的尔虞我诈中变得冷血无情。马琳做出的伦理选 择是其在生活重压下的无奈之举,不能承担母亲、妻子、女儿的责任是导致家 庭伦理悲剧的直接原因。

《顶尖女子》中涉及个人责任的伦理问题丰富而深刻。正如 20 世纪 90年代接替撒切尔夫人的英国首相布莱尔所说: "我们之所以有人性,是 因为我们发展了对自己和对他人承担个人责任的道德力"(托尼•布莱尔 346)。邱吉尔正是通过展示马琳伦理选择带来的负面影响,警示读者和观众 在做出伦理选择的同时不能忽视身份赋予的伦理责任和义务,《顶尖女子》 给人们提供了深刻的道德启示。

邱吉尔的《顶尖女子》聚焦马琳的多重伦理身份,以马琳的伦理选择为 叙事主线,通过反面的道德事例展示当代英国职业女性面临的伦理困境,带 给读者和观众伦理思考。马琳未能承担家庭的伦理责任,其做出的伦理选择 导致了母女分离、姐妹分歧、父母疏远的家庭伦理悲剧。邱吉尔在《顶尖女子》 中对伦理因素格外关注。1991年该剧复演,不仅成为整个撒切尔时代的压卷 之作,也为我们提供了认识社会和生活的伦理选择范例。

#### **Works Cited**

Ammen, Sharon. "Feminist Vision and Audience Response: Tracing the Absent Utopia in Caryl's Top Girls." Utopian Studies 1 (1996): 86-102.

Aston, Elaine and Elin Diamond, eds. The Cambridge Company to Caryl Churchill. New York: Cambridge UP, 2009.

Keyssar, Helene. "The Dramas of Caryl Churchill: The Politics of Possibility." The Massachusetts Review 1 (1983): 198-216.

Kritzer, A. Howe. The Plays of Caryl Churchill: Theatre of Empowerment. New York: St. Martins,

Marwick, Arthur. Total War and Social Change. London: Palgrave Macmillan UK, 1988.

Naismith, Bill and Nick Worrall, eds. Caryl Churchill: Top Girls. London: Methuen Drama, 1991.

聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 基本理论与术语", 《外国文学研究》1(2010): 12-22。

[Nie Zhenzhao. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Basic Theory and Terms." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2010): 12-22.]

一一: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[—. An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- Nightingale, Benedict. "Chairwoman of the Boards." The Times 13 (2006): 14-15.
- Pfaelzer, Jean. "Changing of the Avant-Garde: The Feminist Utopias." Science Fiction Studies 15 (1988): 282-294.
- 瞿世镜、任一鸣:《当代英国小说史》,上海:上海译文出版社,2008年。
- [Qu Shijing and Ren Yiming. A History of Contemporary British Novel. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2008.]
- Reif, Jan. "Women in Retreat: The Politics of Separatism in Women's Literary Utopias." Utopian Studies 2.1/2 (1991): 131-146.
- 托尼•布莱尔:《新英国:我对一个年轻国家的展望》,曹振寰译。北京:世界知识出版社, 1988年。
- [Tony Blair. New Britain: My Vision of a Young Country, translated by Cao Zhenhuan. Beijing: World Affairs Press Co. Ltd., 1988.]

# 文学伦理学批评理论对英传播的创新属性分析 Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Attributes of Innovation in Diffusion in UK

李银波(Li Yinbo)

内容摘要:本文尝试运用创新扩散理论,采用定性和定量相结合的研究方法,从跨文化传播角度对聂珍钊等中国学者近年构建的具有中国特色的"文学伦理学批评"(简称ELC)理论在对英传播中呈现出的相对优势、兼容性、可试性、可观察性和复杂性等5个创新属性进行考察,认为ELC理论对英国的传播一方面是合适和可行的,另一方面也有一定难度,其传播范围和速度会受到一定的限制。这是由ELC理论及其代表作《文学伦理学批评导论》自身的性质决定的,也是由英国文化及中英文化差异等因素决定的。

关键词: 聂珍钊; 文学伦理学批评; 跨文化传播; 创新扩散; 创新属性作者简介: 李银波, 武汉理工大学法学与人文社会学院新闻与传播系教授, 主要从事国际传播与跨文化传播的教学与研究。本文系2021年国家社科基金重大项目"文学伦理学批评的理论资源与对外传播研究"【项目批号: 21&ZD264】和2016年国家社科基金中华学术外译项目"《汉代学术史论》(英文版)"【项目批号: 16WZS014】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Attributes of Innovation in Diffusion in UK

Abstract: The relative advantage, the compatibility, the complexity, the trialability and the observability, namely the 5 attributes of innovation of the Ethical Literary Criticism (or ELC), a Chinese literary theory that was constructed by Prof. Nie Zhenzhao and his colleagues in recent decades and that has been diffusing in the United Kingdom for years, were examined here by the "Theory of Diffusion of Innovations" with qualitative as well as quantitative methods from the perspective of intercultural communication. It's found that the diffusion of the ELC in the UK is possible and suitable on the one hand, though rather difficult and limited in pace and space on the other hand, due to the nature of the ELC, which was represented by Prof. Nie's book *Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism*, and to the British culture and the cultural differences between China and the UK.

**Keywords:** Nie Zhenzhao; ethical literary criticism; intercultural communication;

diffusion of innovations; attributes of innovation

Author: Li Yinbo is Professor of intercultural communication at Department of Journalism & Communication, School of Law, Humanities & Sociology, Wuhan University of Technology (Wuhan 430070, China). His research interest is international & intercultural communication, western cultures & communication (Email: yinbo163cn@163.com).

"文学伦理学批评" (ethical literary criticism, 以下简称 ELC) 理论是以 聂珍钊教授为首的中国学者在继承中国和西方伦理批评传统的基础上构建的 具有中国特色的原创性文学批评理论。它强调文学的伦理起源和伦理教诲功 能,并以"伦理选择"、"伦理身份"、"斯芬克斯因子"等核心概念为基 础建构了自己的理论体系和话语体系。ELC 自 2004 年提出以来,在文学批评 实践中取得一系列成果,在国内外产生了广泛的影响。尤其是2012年"国际 文学伦理学批评研究会"的成立,促进了ELC理论的迅速发展和国内外传播。 ELC 理论通过国际学术会议、国际期刊、国际学者等向海外传播,在国际上 吸引了众多学者的关注和参与,在一定程度上扭转了中国在文学理论研究领 域长期存在的失语症现象。

事实表明,对外文化传播需要遵守传播规律,特别是跨文化传播的规律, 才能更好地推动中华优秀文化走出去,弘扬中华文化并扩大其影响力。根据 创新扩散理论, "创新" (innovation) 的定义是: "当一个观点、方法或物 体被某个人或团体认为是'新的'时候,它就是一项创新"(罗杰斯 14)。 尽管创新扩散理论作为一种群体传播理论主要考察某项新技术、新产品、新 方法在一个群体内的推广应用,但它也适用于一切新事物在一个群体中的扩 散过程,也适用于某项创新从一个文化群体传播到另一个文化群体的跨文化 传播。

创新扩散理论认为, 社会群体成员接受某项创新的相对速度及采用率, 主要受该项创新的以下5个属性的影响: "相对优势、兼容性、可试性、可 观察性和复杂性"(罗杰斯 231)。创新扩散理论的代表人物罗杰斯(Rogers) 说:"社会和个人对这些属性的感知程度在很大程度上决定着创新的采用率" (279)。创新的5个属性"除了用来解释创新采用率外,还可以预测未来的 采用率"(236)。在跨文化传播中,一项创新能否成功地从一个文化群体传 播到另一个文化群体,这首先是与创新自身的属性有关,即创新自身的属性 在很大程度上决定其能否被另一文化群体接受,决定其被接受的程度和速度。 而且,创新的这5个属性具有相对性,即同一个创新面对不同的目标文化群 体时, 其 5 个属性的表现也是不一样的。

ELC 理论的对英传播作为"中华文化走出去"的一个组成部分,尤其是

作为中华学术外译项目的一个组成部分,值得我们高度关注和研究。由于中 国和英国存在巨大的文化差异, ELC 理论能否以及在多大程度能够被英国人 接受,这是中国理论对外传播过程中不得不思考和关注的问题。本文尝试用 传播学中的创新扩散理论对 ELC 理论的对英传播进行客观考察,分析 ELC 理 论及其代表作《文学伦理学批评导论》的5个创新属性在对英传播中的表现。

## 一、ELC 理论的相对优势分析

根据创新扩散理论, "相对优势是指创新相比被其取代的现有观念或技 术优越的程度"(罗杰斯 239)。某项创新的相对优势"与该创新的采用率成 正比"(罗杰斯 280)。

19世纪以前,英国文学批评界一直坚守伦理批评的传统。从20世纪初开 始,一些反传统批评流派如新批评理论、新马克思主义理论、文化研究学派等, 迅速成为文学批评的主流。它们从政治、审美、认知等角度对文学作品进行 解释,不仅背离了伦理批评的传统,而且也越来越脱离文本。近三十年来, 英国出现伦理批评的回归。那么, ELC 理论同英国上述文学批评理论相比有 什么优势呢?

第一, ELC 理论回归文学的本质和伦理主题。美国艺术与人文科学院院 士、耶鲁大学克劳德·罗森(Claude Rawson)教授曾先后担任"国际文学伦 理学批评研究会"副会长和会长。他于2013年出席"第3届文学伦理学批评 国际学术研讨会"并在发言中说西方文学批评界完全忘记了自己肩负的社会 责任, "20世纪六十年代开始出现的花样繁多的文学批评理论让文学教授们 津津乐道于这个主义,那个流派,却把文学最本质的东西——对真善美的追 求,对善恶的区分抛到一边"(转引自徐燕174)。美国艺术与人文科学院 院士、斯坦福大学玛乔瑞·帕洛夫(Marjorie Perloff) 教授在 2014 年出席"第 4届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会"时评价说: "文学最重要的价值之一就 是其伦理与道德的价值。有鉴于此,中国学者提出的文学伦理学批评就显得 意义非凡:该理论不仅复兴了伦理批评这一方法本身,而且紧紧抓住了文学 的本质与基本要义" (转引自 林玉珍 165)。20 世纪西方文学批评理论出现 的舍本求末倾向,可谓误入歧途。与之相比,ELC 理论坚持文学的伦理属性, 强调文学的教诲功能,可谓是把文学理论研究引入正轨。

第二,ELC理论回归文学研究的文本分析法。鉴于20世纪包括英美在内 的西方文学批评越来越脱离文本研究的倾向,美国艺术与人文科学院院士玛 乔瑞·帕洛夫教授在出席2014年"第4届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会" 时说: "在文学批评理论的热潮过去之后,当下国际学术界呼吁回到文学文 本,在文学文本中发现作品的价值与意义"(转引自 林玉珍 165)。ELC理 论将文本分析作为基本研究方法,回应了这一时代呼吁,更符合文学批评的 发展趋势。

第三, ELC 理论较英美其它文学批评理论在某些方面更具解释力。理论 的一个重要功能就是解释功能,但不同理论的解释力是不同的,因此价值也 不一样。ELC 理论具有非常强的解释力,这一点已为中外学者的大量文学批 评实践所证实。欧洲科学院院士、英国伦敦大学玛丽女王学院比较文学系主 任加林·提哈诺夫(Galin Tihanov)教授在为聂珍钊教授的著作《文学伦理学 批评导论》俄文版(2021)写的序言中说: "在他(聂珍钊)的理论场域中, 达尔文的进化论(自然选择)只能有助于解释人作为生物存在的起源,但不 能解释人的区别性特征,尤其不能解释人的创造性特征,即人具有创作歌曲、 诗歌和散文(小说)的能力。人的这些创造性特征也无法通过传统的马克思(恩 格斯)主义的人类劳动起源论来阐释"(qtd. in He Чжэньчжао 2)。达尔文 理论是19世纪以来西方乃至世界最具影响力的学说,但它在解释伦理问题方 面却显得不足。显然, 提哈诺夫教授的评价是对 ELC 理论的解释力的肯定。

第四,ELC理论较英美伦理学理论更具可操作性。ELC理论不仅是一个 较完善的理论系统,而且还有一套实用的话语体系和方法论,具有很强的可 操作性。当前在西方包括英国较流行的伦理学理论是法国哲学家勒维纳斯 (Emmanuel Levinas)的他者伦理学说,不少学者运用他者伦理学来进行文 学批评。但是他者伦理学并非文学批评理论、缺乏可操作性。美国《文体》 (Style) 杂志副主编、美国北伊利诺斯大学的威廉·贝克(William Baker) 教 授2014年在"第4届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会"上的发言中,梳理了20 世纪七十年代以来英美伦理批评的发展,分析了包括勒维纳斯在内的多位学者 的伦理思想。他认为西方的这些伦理思想,无论是他者伦理、语用修辞伦理还 是政治伦理,都未能发展成独立的伦理批评理论和方法。在他看来,聂珍钊及 其同仁们构建的文学伦理学批评日益成熟,必定能"实现艺术对社会的主要 目标,对艺术所在的社会进行反思、阐释及批判"(转引自 林玉珍 165)。 在国际上有重要影响的英国伦敦大学教授罗伯特·伊格尔斯顿(Robert Eaglestone) 主要从事文学与哲学研究,他在2019年于浙江大学召开的"第9届文学 伦理学批评国际学术研讨会"上,做了题为《文学、伦理与记忆,从勒维纳斯 到阿伦特》的学术报告。他说: "伊曼纽尔·勒维纳斯所着力论述的是一种跨 界伦理。正如雅克·德里达等人所说,其理论很难用于理解文本和历史", "因此我尝试用阿伦特的思想来补充勒维纳斯的理论",以更好地解释历史与 记忆。1

因此, ELC 理论相对于勒维纳斯的他者伦理学说及其它伦理批评理论具 有很大的优越性, 同英国当代的文学理论相比也具有相对优势。这种优势是 其对英传播的现实基础。

See Eaglestone, Robert, "Literature, Ethics and memory: from Levinas to Arendt," Conference Manual of the 9th Convention of International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism, Zhejiang University, November 8-10, 2019.1

#### 二、ELC理论的兼容性分析

根据创新扩散理论,"兼容性是指创新与现有的各种价值观、以往的各 种实践经验以及潜在采用者的需求相一致的程度","兼容程度与该创新的 采用率成正比"(罗杰斯 280)。该定义仅列举创新采用者的价值观等几项因 素,实际上创新除了应与采用者的经验和需求相符外,还应与拟进入的群体 在文化诸方面而不仅仅是价值观上相容。由于采用者的经验和需求需要做相 关调查,本文对此暂不论述,仅就文化因素进行分析。

在跨文化传播中,创新与其拟进入的群体间的文化共性越大,彼此之间 的兼容性就越大, 创新扩散的障碍就越少, 误解和冲突也越小。反之同理。 兼容性并不意味着没有差异,而是意味着差异是非冲突性的,否则创新仍会 受到排斥, 出现水土不服, 因此是不兼容的。

中国文化与英国文化之间存在着很大的差异。ELC理论作为中国学者构 建的有中国特色的文学批评理论,与英国文化的兼容性如何呢?对此我们可 从ELC理论与英国文化的共性与差异性两方面来分析。

## (一) ELC 理论与英国文化的共性较大

对ELC理论的代表性著作即聂珍钊教授的《文学伦理学批评导论》进行 分析,可以发现 ELC 理论与英国文化有较大的共性。聂珍钊教授就读于英语 专业、长期从事外国文学的教学和研究、多次到英美访学、深受西方文化特 别是英国文化的影响。纵览全书,可以看出该书尽管中国文化特色明显,但 其理论资源、专业术语、论述对象、例证、引用文献、所涉人物等,有相当 一部分来源于以英美为主的西方。

- 1、从该书的章节安排来看,它是以英美文学和文化为重点研究对象。该 书共分14章,其中有11章以西方文学文化为研究对象,如研究英国文学的"哈 代的创作与伦理道德思想",研究美国文学的"《老人与海》与丛林法则"和"《悲 悼》的乱伦与复仇",研究西方文学源头古希腊文学的"文学伦理学批评与 道德批评"和"伦理禁忌与俄狄浦斯的悲剧"。全书以中国文学为研究对象 的只有3章,即"文艺与文学概念的含混"、"文学伦理学批评在中国的传播、 接受和勃兴"、"伦理演变与中国五四时期的诗歌"。因此,该书的研究对 象是以英美文学为主的西方文学,与英国文学文化的共性大于个性。
- 2、该书的支撑材料主要来自西方文化。从该书脚注中的参考文献看,该 书共有307条文献注释,其中外国著作200条,占2/3,含70条英文著作和 130条译著,中国著作107条,仅占1/3。从书后的索引看,人名索引共229个, 外国人名(大多数来自英美)163个,占71%,中国人名66个,仅占29%; 书名索引共346个,外国书名(大多数是英美书名)共有186个,占54%, 中国书名 160 个,仅占 46%1。这些数据说明,《文学伦理学批评导论》一书

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第283-291页。

与英国文学文化的共性较大。

3、该书的思想与理论资源主要来自西方,尤其是来自英国文化。该书后 的附录一《文学伦理学批评术语列表》共列53个术语,除开"语言"、"文 字"、"天性"、"人性"、"伦理"、"道德"6个中国和西方都有的术语 以及13个聂珍钊教授独创的术语如"伦理选择"、"科学选择"、"脑文本"、 "斯芬克斯因子"、"文学伦理学批评"等,其余34个术语都源自西方文化。 即使聂教授自创的13个术语,也都包含有西方文化的因素,如"科学选择" 中的"科学"和"选择"概念、"斯芬克斯因子"中的"斯芬克斯"和"因子" 概念等<sup>1</sup>。具体来说,ELC 理论所吸收的西方特别是英国的思想与理论资源主 要体现在以下几个方面。

首先, ELC 理论借鉴了西方文学批评中的伦理批评传统。该书用较多的 篇幅(第5章到第8章)论述了从古希腊到21世纪初西方国家的文学批评史, 尤其是其中的伦理批评史,得出"文学产生的目的就是源于伦理表达的需要, 文学的功能就是教诲";"文学价值的大小在于其所发挥的教诲功能的大小", "因此文学经典的价值在于其伦理价值"(聂珍钊142)。聂教授进而提出应 从伦理的视角来阐释和评价文学作品,将 ELC 的方法作为文学批评的主要方 法。他将自己倡导的这一中国文学批评新路径视为西方文学伦理批评传统在 中国的发展和延伸,并在第9章中对这一延伸进行了专门论述。

其次, ELC 理论借鉴了西方哲学特别是英国哲学传统。尽管西方文学有 悠久的伦理批评传统,但未能构建相关的理论体系。 聂教授及其同仁构建了 ELC 理论,但该理论仍然是以西方的哲学理论为基础的,如自然意志、自由 意志、理性意志等概念可追溯到德国的康德、叔本华、弗洛伊德和荣格等哲 学家的理论。而英国的哲学传统更是构建 ELC 理论的支柱,一是英国达尔文 的生物进化论成为 ELC 理论核心概念"伦理选择"及其它重要概念如"自然 选择"、"科学选择"的理论来源<sup>2</sup>,二是英国文化研究学派(亦称伯明翰学派) 的相关理论则成为 ELC 的"伦理身份"、"伦理语境"、"伦理禁忌"等重 要术语的理论来源。

第三,ELC 理论借鉴了英国文学批评的方法。文学批评的方法是 ELC 理论的重要组成部分, 其所采用的主要方法就是文本细读法。为扭转我国文 学批评在西方批评影响下出现的脱离文本空谈理论的风气, 聂珍钊教授早在 2004 提出 ELC 理论时,就倡导将英国剑桥文学批评的方法,即利维斯 (F. R. Leavis 1895-1978) 的文本细读法作为 ELC 的方法。<sup>3</sup>

通过以上分析可以看出, ELC 理论与英国文化的共性大于个性。

(二) ELC 理论与英国文化的差异是非冲突性的

<sup>1</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第245-246页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第32页。

<sup>3</sup> 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第164页。

ELC 理论与英国文化是否能兼容还取决于二者之间的差异,包括差异的 程度和性质。差异越小越容易兼容,但即使二者只有百分之一的差异,如果 这一差异是冲突性的,两者仍不具兼容性。如果二者在宗教、政治、法律、 价值观等重要文化领域存在冲突,一方必将排斥另一方。如前所述, ELC 理 论与英国文化的差异很小,那么其差异是否具有冲突性呢?

首先,从 ELC 理论的观点看,ELC 理论与英国文化没有冲突性。虽然 ELC 理论是以聂珍钊为首的中国学者构建的理论,是不同于以往英国或其它 西方国家的具有中国特色的文学批评理论,但其一些术语和观点如"斯芬克 斯因子"和"伦理选择"等,实质上是西方某些理论的延伸。如前所述,ELC 理论是吸取西方特别是英国的思想和理论资源而构建的一种新的文学批评理论 和方法,因此它与以达尔文主义为核心的英国文化本质上是没有冲突的。

其次,从该书涉及的中国文化内容看,ELC 理论与英国文化也不具有冲 突性。尽管中英文化存在巨大差异,但该书以中国文化为主的内容只有3章, 都是文学内容,不涉及宗教、政治、法律问题、涉及价值观的内容也不多。 在第 14 章 "伦理演变与中国五四时期的诗歌"中涉及中国的诗歌伦理,即新 诗伦理战胜旧诗伦理。中国的旧诗伦理虽然与英国诗歌伦理差异较大,但这 种差异是对立而不是冲突性的。新诗伦理是胡适等人受英美诗歌影响创立的, 与英国诗歌伦理的差异很小, 也不是冲突性的。

然而, ELC 理论对英国传播有一个不可忽视的因素, 那就是文化中心主 义倾向。在跨文化传播中,各文化的成员都有自我文化中心主义思想倾向, 对自己的文化持肯定态度,对外来文化持防备心理和否定态度。英国人也不 例外。特别是英国作为老牌世界帝国,很多学者仍带有较强的西方中心主义 思想,对来自亚非拉国家的学术抱有怀疑、藐视和排斥心理。由于这种心理 和态度, ELC 理论对英国传播仍可能出现一定的困难。

总之, ELC 理论与英国文化存在一些差异, 但差异远远小于共性, 而且 差异是非冲突性的,因此 ELC 理论与英国文化具有很强的兼容性。2015 年和 2017年英国大学组织召开了两次 ELC 研讨会,这表明 ELC 理论与英国文化 是没有冲突的,是能兼容的。

#### 三、ELC 理论的可观察性分析

根据创新扩散理论,"可观察性是指创新成果能被其他人看到的程度", 且"一项创新的可观察性与它的采用率成正比"(罗杰斯 272)。可观察性 的定义应包括两层含义,第一层是某项创新在被采用前是否可观察,第二层 是某项创新在被采用后所产生的效果是否可观察。在这两层含义中,前者影 响某项创新能否在某个群体中吸引先驱采用者,而后者影响某项创新能否在 某个群体中吸引更多早期采用者。就 ELC 理论来说,目前仅涉及第一层含义。

可观察性对创新扩散来说十分重要。人们刚接触某项创新时,都会因感

到陌生而产生畏惧心理和不确定感。如果该创新是可观察的,人们容易了解 其形貌、结构、原理、性能、功效和价值等,就会消除畏惧和不确定心理, 进而产生兴趣和采用的愿望。一般来说,在跨文化传播中,物质产品比精神 产品具有更高的可观察性,因而更容易扩散,其原因就在于物质产品是具体 的、有形的,因而容易辨识其用途和价值。精神产品大都是用语言符号来表 达的,是通过某种媒体来传播的,不能直接观察,内容的专业性较强,因此 其接触和理解有很多障碍和困难, 用途和价值也难以判断。

ELC 理论作为精神产品,是专业性很强的原创理论,尽管它有时也用 英文表达,但主要是用英国人不熟悉的中文表达的,因此对英传播的可观察 性不高。但这并不意味着它没有可观察性。前文引用的多位英美权威学者对 ELC 理论的相对优势的评价,就是他们观察的结果。这表明 ELC 理论仍具有 一定的可观察性,具体表现在以下几个方面:

首先, ELC 理论成为一些国际学术会议上的重要议题。至 2022 年 11 月, "国际文学伦理学批评研究会"已经举办了11届"文学伦理学批评国际学术 研讨会"、3届"文学伦理学批评跨学科研究大学生领航论坛"、8次"文学 伦理学批评与世界文学研究高层论坛",其中第1次"文学伦理学批评与世 界文学研究高层论坛"于2015年7月21-23日在英国的普雷斯顿等地召开,"第 7届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会"于2017年8月8-10日在英国伦敦玛丽 女王大学召开。<sup>1</sup>与会的英国学者不仅倾听中国学者关于 ELC 理论的报告,而 且与他们展开对话交流,讨论 ELC 理论的主要术语、观点、方法,肯定了其 优点和价值。

其次,ELC理论成为一些学术期刊论文的重要话题。自2004年以来,特 别是2012年"国际文学伦理学批评研究会"成立以来,中国的《外国文学研 究》、《文学跨学科研究》和《世界文学研究论坛》等学术期刊每年都发表 多组或多篇ELC方面的文章。例如《外国文学研究》自2005-2019年共组织了 32个ELC研究专栏,于2017年第5期推出"中外学者对话文学伦理学批评"专 栏, 共发表一百多篇专栏论文。2一些国外期刊也相继发表关于ELC理论的英 文论文。例如,英国《泰晤士报文学增刊》(The Times Literary Supplement) 于2015年刊发美国著名学者威廉·贝克与我国学者尚必武合写的推介ELC的文 章;德国的A&HCI 收录期刊《阿卡迪亚》(Arcadia) 2015年第1期发表"文学 伦理学批评:东方与西方"("Special Issue: Ethical Literary Criticism: East and West")专刊;美国A&HCI收录期刊《比较文学与文化》(CLC WEB: Comparative Literature and Culture) 2015年第5期发表主题为"21世纪小说的文学伦理

<sup>1</sup> 参见 苏晖: "学术影响力与国际话语权建构:文学伦理学批评十五年发展历程回顾",《外 国文学研究》5(2019):34-51。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 苏晖: "学术影响力与国际话语权建构:文学伦理学批评十五年发展历程回顾",《外 国文学研究》5(2019):34-51。

学批评"的专刊,等等。这些期刊论文引起了英国学者的关注和兴趣,加深了 他们对ELC理论的术语、观点、方法的了解。

根据近年来ELC理论对英传播的情况,前文提到的几位英国权威学者正 是通过国际学术会议和期刊学术论文这两种途径接触和观察到ELC理论的。例 如,欧洲科学院院士加林·提哈诺夫和韩德尚(Séan Hand)多次出席文学伦 理学批评国际学术研讨会及相关学术论坛,这表明者ELC理论已经走进了英国 学者的视野,引起了他们的关注,吸引他们参与ELC理论的讨论和研究。

那么,怎样才能让更多英国学者更好地观察到并接受 ELC 理论呢? 最佳 途径就是聂珍钊教授阐述 ELC 理论的专著《文学伦理学批评导论》的英文版 能够尽早出版并在英国发行。该书已获国家社科基金中华学术外译项目立项, 不久将出版, ELC 理论在英国的可观察性将大为改观。

## 四、ELC 理论的可试性分析

根据创新扩散理论, "可试性是指创新可以在有限的基础上被试验的程 度","一项创新的可试性与它的采用率成正比"(罗杰斯 271)。试验的目 的不仅是检验创新的正确性及是否符合需要, 更重要的是发现其效用和价值。 并不是所有的创新都具有可试性,特别是一些理论创新。一般来说,自然科 学的理论大都是可试验的,但也有些自然科学理论因人类目前的科技水平所 限而暂时不能试验。而人文和社会科学领域的理论,有些是可试验的,也有 些是不可试验的,例如关于古代或未来人类社会的理论、关于人类的精神活 动的理论,大都只是猜想,是无法试验的。那么 ELC 理论作为一种文学批评 理论,其对英传播是否有可试性?下面将对此做一些辩证分析。

首先,ELC理论具有一定的可试性。ELC理论作为一种人文和社会科学 理论,虽然不是完全可试验,但也不是完全不可试验,其中某些内容是可试 验的。理论一般具有三项基本功能:认识功能、解释功能和指导功能。ELC 理论作为一种文学批评理论,其认识功能在于它可提供一种关于文学现象的 本质和规律性认识,然而其对人类的产生过程和文学的产生过程的理解及对 人性的理解可以说是无法试验的。ELC理论的解释功能在于它可运用于解释 各种文学作品和文学现象, 这一点已被近年来中外学者运用于文学研究之 中,因此是可以试验的。ELC理论的指导功能在于它可用于指导人们进行有 关文学的各种实践活动。例如,ELC理论重视文学的教诲功能,可纠正各国 文学创作中道德沦丧的不良倾向。因此ELC理论在指导作家进行文学创作方 面,在指导文学教学及道德教化方面,具有一定的可试性。

其次, ELC 对英传播的可试性是一个较缓慢的过程。创新的可试性还涉 及采用创新的决策过程。根据创新扩散理论,采用创新的决策过程包括5个 阶段:认知——知道了创新的存在并了解到它的功能;说服——对创新形成 喜欢或不喜欢的态度,包括对创新5个属性的认知;决策——做出接受或拒 绝创新的选择;执行——将创新投入使用;确认——指强化或撤回此前关于 创新的决策。1

与可观察性类似,可试性也是创新的采用者特别是率先采用者了解该创 新的性能和功能的重要途径,是判断其用途和价值并决定是否采用的重要依 据。任何试验都需要付出一定的时间、人力及资金成本,创新越复杂、试验 需要付出的成本也越大。因此人们一般不会在"认知"阶段进行试验,而是 在"说服"阶段当产生了兴趣时,在做出准备采用的"决策"前才进行试验。 如果试验的结果满意,则决定采用某项创新,若不满意则拒绝采用。

一般来说,精神产品的可试性较物质产品差,这也是精神产品比物质 产品更难扩散的原因所在。要尝试运用某种理论,必须先深入学习领会该理 论,但要掌握某些理论远不像学习一两个数学或物理公式那么简单。在跨文 化传播中、试验同样要受到文化因素的影响、外来创新的可试性要劣于同文 化的创新。因此在跨文化传播中,往往要经过更长的时间才会有人愿意对一 种外来的理论开始做相关尝试。ELC理论作为一种较复杂的精神产品创新, 其对英传播的可试性当然也要经历上述过程中的"认知"、"说服"后才能 出现,因此也是一个相当缓慢甚至十分艰难的过程。

ELC 理论的对英传播证明了这一点。2014年,英国学者开始接触和"认 知" ELC 理论, 在至 2022 年的 8 年时间里, 出现了一些可喜的运用 ELC 理 论的范例。例如,在2021年5月召开的"第2届文学伦理学批评跨学科研 究大学生领航论坛"上,英国的青年学子韦塞利娜·朱姆贝娃(Veselina Dzhumbeva) 运用 ELC 理论分析 20 世纪俄国流散作家叶卡捷琳娜·巴库尼亚的 小说《六人恋》中的婚姻伦理问题。 $^2$ 在 2021 年 10 月召开的"第 10 届文学伦 理学批评国际学术研讨会"上,英国著名学者加林·提哈诺夫则比照ELC理论, 用内省伦理来分析一些画作表现的人类在新冠疫情下的处境。3

此前还有一些英国学者也参加了相关的国际学术会议或阅读了相关的学 术论文,但他们的会议论文表明他们主要是在与ELC理论进行对话,仍处于 "说服"的早期阶段。但提哈诺夫和朱姆贝娃的尝试标志着英国学者已接近 完成"说服"阶段,即将进入"决策"阶段。

<sup>1</sup> 参见 E·M·罗杰斯:《创新的扩散》(第5版), 唐兴通等译, 北京: 电子工业出版社, 2016年, 第177页。

<sup>2</sup> See Veselina Dzhumbeva, "Ekaterina Bakunina and the Ethical Dilemma of Infidelity," Proceedings of Interdisciplinary Studies of Ethical Literary Criticism: The Second Leading Forum of Ethical Literary Criticism for College Students, vol.1, edited by Sun Yanping and Ren Jie, Hong Kong: Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited, 2022, 1-13.

<sup>3</sup> See Galin Tihanov. "The Ethics of Introspection: Journeys and Masks," Conference Manual of the 10th Convention of International Association for Ethical Literary Criticism. University of Science & Technology Beijing, October 16-17, 2021. 另参见 黄绮: "人工智能时代的文学伦理学批评——'第 十届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会'会议综述",《外国文学研究》6(2021):170-174。

#### 五、ELC 理论的复杂性分析

根据创新扩散理论, "复杂性是指理解和使用某项创新的相对难度", 目 "某项创新的复杂性与它被接受的比例成反比",即复杂性越低越有利于采用 者接纳(罗杰斯 270)。

根据创新的学科属性、结构与功能等因素,创新的复杂性可为高、中、 低三级。高复杂性创新是综合运用多学科的理论和技术的创新,创新的结构 多元、复杂、庞大,功能也是多重的,学习和运用的难度极大,常常需要一 个慢长的过程,因而扩散难度最大。中复杂性创新是综合运用同一学科多项 相关理论和技术的创新,创新的结构较复杂和庞大,功能也较多,不太容易 理解和运用,因而扩散难度较大。低复杂性创新是运用某个学科的一两项理 论和技术的创新,创新的结构简单,功能也单一,最容易学习和运用,因而 也最容易扩散。「ELC 理论是一种跨学科的理论,它是在文学、伦理学、哲学、 人类学、心理学等多学科的基础上构建起来的文学批评理论,有自己独特的 理论体系、话语体系。根据创新复杂性的等级划分, ELC 理论在内容上明显 属于高复杂性创新。

ELC 理论作为一项理论创新,其成果是通过语言符号来表达的,采用者 要通过阅读才能理解和运用,因此其复杂性还可用易读性测量进行分析。根 据弗雷奇(Rudolf Flesch)提出的"易读性公式",读物的难度与句子的长度 和单词的长度有关。2该公式适用于测试英文等字母文字读物的阅读难度,因 此该公式不适合于分析汉语作品。由于聂珍钊教授关于ELC理论的代表性著 作《文学伦理学批评导论》的英文版尚未出版,我们用他于欧洲重要学术期 刊《阿卡狄亚: 国际文学文化学刊》(Arcadia: International Journal of Literary Culture) 2015年第1期上用英文发表的全面介绍 ELC 理论的学术论文《走 向文学伦理学批评》("Towards Ethical Literary Criticism")进行测量。<sup>3</sup> 测 量的步骤如下:

第一步,抽样。《走向文学伦理学批评》一文在《阿卡狄亚》杂志中共 占19页,即从第83页到第101页。我们从该文第1页开始每隔2页选取一页,共 选取6页进行分析,被选取的分别是第83、86、89、92、95、98页(P101为参 考文献,可不计)。在每个被选取的页面中选取第2个自然段进行分析(P83 选取摘要),从每个被选段落的第1个单词开始数100个单词(若第2段不足 100个单词,则接着数第3段乃至第4段,直到数100个单词为止)。这样共获 6段100个单词的分析样本。第二步,计算每段样本的音节数。第三步,计算

<sup>1</sup> 参见 黄海洋: 《大学技术创新扩散的机理与模式研究》,上海:上海交通大学出版社, 2015年,第68-69页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 沃纳•赛佛林等: 《传播理论》,郭镇之等译,北京: 华夏出版社,1999 年,第 132 页。

<sup>3</sup> See Nie Zhenzhao, "Towards Ethical Literary Criticism," Arcadia: International Journal of Literary Culture 1 (2015): 83-101.

每段样本中句子的平均单词数。第四步,根据弗雷奇的"易读性公式": R.E.=206.835-0.846wl-1.015sl, 计算每段样本文字的易读性分值, 并计算其平 均值。(注: "wl"为每100年单词的音节数: "sl"为每句平均单词数。)¹。第 五步,确定该文的阅读等级与难度。结果见下表:

《阿卡狄亚》杂志所载《走向文学伦理学批评》一文的易读性测量结果								
		P83	P86	P89	P92	P95	P98	平均值
第 2 段	音节数 /100 单词	201	161	170	171	153	162	169.667
	句数及平均	5s	6s	5s	5s	4s	5s	5s
	单词数 / 每句	20w/s	22.67w/s	17.2w/s	20.8w/s	24.5w/s	17.8w/s	20.495w/s
	易读性分值	16.489	47.619	45.557	41.057	52.530	51.716	42.494
	阅读等级	大专毕业	大学	大学	大学	第 10-12 级	第 10-12 级	大学
	阅读难度	很难	难	难	难	较难	较难	难

由上表可知,《走向文学伦理学批评》一文的阅读难度为"难"。

由于弗雷奇的"易读性公式"是以青少年读者为研究对象的,因此他所 确立的"难"度标准,是对没有受过大学教育的人来说的,而对受过大学以 上教育的人来说,特别对大学教授等学者来说就不足为"难"。从语言表达 上看,上述测量结果表明,《走向文学伦理学批评》对没有受过大学教育的 人来说是"难",具有复杂性,因而该文或 ELC 理论要在英国普通民众中传 播并获采用具有较大难度。

在跨文化传播中, 创新的扩散还受到各种文化因素的阻碍, 因此复杂性 越高的创新其跨文化传播的难度也越大。就 ELC 理论的对英传播来说,因中 英文化在语言文字、思维方式、价值观等方面存在较大差异,这些因素必然 会增加 ELC 理论对英传播的难度,因此其复杂性也显得更高。

虽然从理论上分析, ELC 理论具有高复杂性, 但从实际上看, ELC 理论 的对英传播又有一定的特殊性。如在兼容性中所述,由于ELC理论在很大程 度上是借鉴英国等西方国家的文化资源构建起来的,该理论的许多术语和观 点对英国人来说是比较熟悉的。特别是 ELC 理论借鉴了英国的学术传统,借 用了英国剑桥文学批评方法即利维斯的文本细读法,这使英国学者理解和运 用 ELC 理论进行作品分析变得更容易。由于 ELC 理论对英传播的主要对象是 受过高等教育的英国文学专业的学者, ELC 理论对他们来说不会显得太难和 太复杂,因此 ELC 理论的实际复杂性远低于理论上的复杂性。

自文学伦理学批评创立以来,中外许多学者运用 ELC 理论对古今中外尤 其是英国的文学作品进行了分析和阐释。例如,由徐彬教授主编的《英国文 学的伦理学批评》(2020)作为国家社科基金重大项目"文学伦理学批评: 理论构建与批评实践研究"的结项成果之一,为英国文学研究提供了新思路 1 参见沃纳•赛佛林等:《传播理论》,郭镇之等译,北京:华夏出版社,1999年,第132页。 和新发现。这些研究成果,特别是一些用英文发表的论文,为英国学者运用 ELC 理论提供了参考,降低了 ELC 理论的复杂性。

通过对 ELC 理论的 5 个创新属性进行分析可以看出, ELC 理论对于英国 文化具有较大的相对优势、较强的兼容性,但其可试性、可观察性则较弱, 复杂性也较高。这些特点表明,一方面, ELC 理论及其代表作《文学伦理学 批评导论》英文版在英国传播是可能的,有很大的潜力和空间。另一方面, 其对英传播也有相当的难度, 其传播的范围将局限于英国学术界, 主要是英 国高等教育或研究机构中从事文学教学和研究的群体, 很难触及未受过高等 教育的普通读者群体。

#### **Works Cited**

董学文: 《西方文学理论史》。北京: 北京大学出版社,2018年。

[Dong Xuewen. Literary Theories in Western Countries. Beijing: Peking UP, 2018.]

林玉珍: "文学伦理学批评研究的新高度——'第4届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会'综述", 《外国文学研究》1 (2015): 161-167。

[Lin Yuzhen. "A New Monument in Ethical Literary Criticism: 'A Review of the 4th International Symposium on Ethical Literary Criticism'." Foreign Literature Studies 1 (2015): 161-167.]

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

Не Чжэньчжао. Введение в Этическую Литературную Критику. Перевод с китайского. Чжоу Лу. Москва: Санкт-Петербургский Государственный Университет Издательство, 2021.

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism, translated by Zhou Lu. Saint Petersburg: Saint Petersburg UP, 2021.]

E·M·罗杰斯:《创新的扩散》(第5版),唐兴通等译。北京:电子工业出版社,2016年。

[Rogers, Everett M. Diffusion of Innovations, 5th Edition, translated by Tang Xingtong. Beijing: Publishing House of Electronics Industry, 2016.]

苏晖: "学术影响力与国际话语权建构:文学伦理学批评十五年发展历程回顾",《外国文学 研究》5(2019):34-51。

[Su Hui. "Academic Influence and the Construction of International Discourse Power: The Development of Ethical Literary Criticism in the Past Fifteen Years." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2019): 34-51.] 徐彬:《英国文学的伦理学批评》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。

[Xu Bin. Ethical Literary Criticism of English Literature. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]

徐燕、溪云:"文学伦理学批评的新局面和生命力——'第3届文学伦理学批评国际学术研讨会' 综述",《外国文学研究》6(2013):171-176。

[Xu Yan and Xi Yun. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Its Openness, Inclusiveness and Vitality: 'A Review of the 3<sup>rd</sup> International Symposium on Ethical Literary Criticism'." Foreign Literature Studies 6 (2013): 171-176.]

# 伦理、科学与政治的思想实验——《三体》三部曲 中的宇宙选择

## Thought Experiments in Science, Ethics and Politics: Cosmic Selection in the Trilogy of *Three-Body Problem*

刘 舸 (Liu Ge) 李 云 (Li Yun)

内容摘要:文学伦理学批评提出"文明三阶段论",将人类文明划分为自然选择、伦理选择和科学选择三个阶段。如果科学选择是文明历史的终点,那么刘慈欣的《三体》三部曲以其宏大的时空视野和超前的宇宙整体观重新开启了一段未来全新的人类文明进程——宇宙选择阶段,引领人们思考继科学选择后人类文明新的发展形态。宇宙选择由宇宙规律主宰,文明个体与宇宙母体的存在关系共同构建了新的宇宙政治,决定了文明未来的生存走向。

关键词: 文学伦理学批评; 伦理选择; 科学选择; 宇宙选择; 《三体》 作者简介: 刘舸, 湖南大学文学院教授, 博士生导师, 主要从事比较文学与世 界文学研究; 李云, 湖南大学外国语学院博士生, 研究方向为中西科幻文学。

**Title:** Thought Experiments in Science, Ethics and Politics: Cosmic Selection in the Trilogy of *Three-Body Problem* 

**Abstract:** Ethical literary criticism puts forward the "three stages of human civilization", respectively natural selection, ethical selection and scientific selection. If scientific selection is the termination of human civilization, the trilogy of *Three-Body Problem* written by Liu Cixin, in a majestic vision of the space and time and advanced holistic view of the universe, has conceived a new stage of human civilization in the future—the stage of cosmic selection, which leads us to think about a new development form of human civilization after scientific selection. The cosmic selection is dominated by the cosmic law, and the relationship between the civilized individual and cosmic parent jointly constructs the new cosmic politics and determines the future survival trend of civilization.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; ethical selection; scientific selection; cosmic selection; *Three Body Problem* 

**Authors:** Liu Ge is Professor and Ph.D. Supervisor at the College of Chinese Language and Literature, Hunan University (Changsha 410082, China). Her research interests are English poetry and comparative literature (Email: liugeeee@163.com).

Li Yun is a Ph. D. candidate at the School of Foreign Languages, Hunan University (Changsha 410082, China), with the research direction of Chinese and Western Scifi literature (Email: 1327514676@gg.com).

刘慈欣的《三体》三部曲凭借"雨果奖"等世界声誉将中国科幻作品提 高到了世界级水平1,在掀起一股科幻研究热潮的同时,也引发了人们对道德 与文明的思考。如科幻作家韩松认为《三体》三部曲"挑战令一代人困惑的 道德律令与自然法则冲突互存的极限〔……〕并让我们重新检讨这个行星上 及这个行星之外的一切审美观"2;宋明炜也多次撰文研究:"《三体》比刘 蒸欣的其他作品更具有深切的社会意识,小说中逐渐浮现出来的'宇宙社会 学',纠结在制度建构与人性道德的冲突之上,实际上也更为直接地将'中 国经验'此时此刻的难题投放在整个宇宙的尺度之上"(26);刘慈欣本人 也在 2011 年的一次访谈中坦然交代《三体》系列的创作初衷: "《三体》想 说的,就是人类目前的道德体系和大灾难来临时人类自救行为之间的矛盾"(转 引自 陈颀 6)。也正如此,《三体》三部曲常被当作道德伦理困境小说加以 解读。如果仅仅看到《三体》三部曲中的道德与生存冲突,似乎小瞧了这部 作品的"里程碑"3意义。《三体》三部曲作为一种宇宙叙事科幻小说,以其"虚 构的认知疏离"(Darko 25)和对当下现实的思考与酝酿,将中国五千年历史 和宇宙一百八十多亿历史,通过陌生化的手法和新奇性的审美效果,将人类 未来未知的文明形态展现在人们面前,进行了一次最富想象力的科学、伦理 与政治的思想实验。正如其以黑暗森林法则构建的"宇宙社会学"让人反思 人类主流价值观一样、《三体》三部曲也因其宏大的时空视野和超前的宇宙 整体观,对文学伦理学批评提出的文明三阶段论进行了回应和思考。

文学伦理学批评将人类文明发展的进程分为自然选择(natural selection)、伦理选择(ethical selection)和科学选择(scientific selection)三个阶 段,三段文明又将人分为"原始人、现代人和科学人"4。目前,人类已经完 成自然选择进入了伦理选择阶段。当科学技术得到前所未有的发展,"伦理 特性逐渐让位于科学标准,最后在科学选择过程中逐渐消亡"(聂珍钊 王松

<sup>1</sup> 参见严锋: "从这里到永恒", 《南方都市报》2010年10月17日: GB24。

<sup>2</sup> 来自韩松对刘慈欣,《三体》(重庆:重庆出版社,2008年)图书封底推荐。

<sup>3</sup> 来自江晓原对刘慈欣,《三体Ⅲ•死神永生》(重庆: 重庆出版社,2010年)的图书封底推荐, 原句为"一部真正里程碑式的作品,必将成为经典"。

<sup>4</sup> 文学伦理学批评认为,人类文明的发展进程是由三个选择阶段构成的,即自然选择(natural selection)、伦理选择(ethical selection)和科学选择(scientific selection)三个阶段。这三个阶 段将人分为原始人、现代人和科学人。自然选择是进化的结果,人的出现标志着自然选择过程 的结束。伦理选择是通过伦理教化解决人的本质问题,让人变成符合道德规范的人。科学选择 解决人的科学化问题,是一个由科学技术改变人类、改造人类,甚至是再造人类的过程。参见 聂珍钊、王松林:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》,北京:北京大学出版社,2020年,第1-28页。 以下引文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

林 20),科学人将逐渐替代现代人完成科学选择成为世界主体,人类文明随 之终结。"科学人完成科学选择以后,不仅实现了自我改造得以永生,也将 有能力超越地球进入其他星球,进入一个全新的宇宙选择阶段"(20)。而 刘慈欣的《三体》三部曲正是以其整体性的思维和超越性的视野,为我们展 现了这一全新的、代表人类文明新进程的宇宙选择阶段。这不仅是对文学伦 理学批评提出的文明三阶段论进行的补充,而且引领人们思考继科学选择后 人类文明新的发展形态:人类文明的尽头到底是什么?刘慈欣企图通过将科 学、伦理与政治等人类哲学命题置于宇宙的高度,"主动地形塑各种技术的 意图和科学理论的能指"(海勒 28),预测当下文明遭遇灾难的多种可能性 逻辑结果,思考和预测了人类文明新的发展形态,完成了宇宙选择阶段宇宙 政治文明形态塑造的文本先行。

## 一、道德与生存:新旧人类的不同伦理选择

在"2007中国(成都)国际科幻·奇幻大会"上,刘慈欣在现场与江晓 原做了一个非常有名的"吃人"思想实验: "假如人类世界只剩你我她了, 我们三个携带着人类文明的一切。而咱俩必须吃了她才能生存下去,你吃 吗?"(刘慈欣,《刘慈欣谈科幻》41)江晓原选择了不吃,因为失去了人 性也就失去了文明。而刘慈欣则认为为了人类文明的生存,可以吃。当科学 将人类文明置于宇宙尺度,人类文明能否通过道德得以维系?面对文明的生 存危机,是坚持人类普世道德还是生存第一?在《三体》三部曲中,刘慈欣 通过"吃人"思想实验展现了新旧人类不同的伦理选择,探讨了人类文明遭 **遇危机时,普世道德的可靠性与适用性,重新审视了道德的标准和意义,启** 发人们思考继伦理选择阶段后,科学选择阶段的伦理形态与主流价值观。

"斯芬克斯因子"是文学伦理学批评分析人物形象的重要依据,由"人 性因子"和"兽性因子"构成,"两种因子有机地组合在一起,构成了一个 完整的人"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》38)。人性因子作为"斯芬 克斯因子"中的高级因子可以控制作为低级因子的兽性因子,使人成为有伦 理意识的人。"人性因子通过人头体现理性力量,兽性因子通过兽性体现原 始本能","人始终处于做人还是做兽的两种基本选择中。这种选择就是伦 理选择"(聂珍钊 王松林 7)。在文学作品中,人性因子和兽性因子分别转 化成理性意志和自由意志,两种因子的不同组合和变化会导致人物的不同伦 理选择,形成不同的伦理冲突。

作为《三体》三部曲中的"圣母"形象,程心是人类普世道德的化身。 她坚信爱可以感化一切、解决一切,甚至为了维持人类普世道德不惜牺牲整 个人类文明。在程心接替罗辑成为第二任执剑人后的短短十分钟,程心因为 心中的道德律令,坚定认为自己"是一个守护者,不是毁灭者"(刘慈欣,《死 神永生》136),放弃了按下能够毁灭三体和地球两个文明的引力波发射装置 开关,最终导致威慑失败,人类惨遭三体文明驱逐。当云天明、维德殚精竭 虑为人类的最后生存机会——光速飞船计划而苦心经营时,程心又因为光速 飞船计划违背人类基本道德拒绝了维德的建议, 既辜负了云天明的一片苦心, 也导致"维德以反人类罪、战争罪和违法曲率驱动技术禁止法律判处死刑"(刘 慈欣,《死神永生》384),人类也因此失去了唯一的生存机会。"她两次处 于仅次于上帝的位置上,却两次以爱的名义把世界推向深渊"(刘慈欣,《死 神永生》451)。可以说,程心"除了善良和责任感外什么都没有"(108)。 她是人类文明经过伦理教诲后高度道德化的成果,代表了伦理选择阶段传统 人类的价值观。威慑计划与光速飞船计划的两次失败,与其说是程心个人作 出的伦理选择,不如说是以道德自居的人类文明对普世价值观的充分信任与 肯定。正如智子对程心的同情: "人们选择了你,也就选择了这个结局"(刘 慈欣,《死神永生》144)。程心"只是一个符号,代表着人类普世价值观和 道德"(转引自 陈颀 32),她的失败也即人类普世道德的失败。

与程心始终以人类普世道德为伦理规范不同, 罗辑、章北海、维德等超 英雄代表了诞生于末日时代的新人类,他们逾越了人类道德的藩篱与伦理的 禁锢,任由"兽性因子"战胜"人性因子"。在文明危机面前,他们始终以 生存是文明的第一需要为伦理诉求,放弃做人甘愿成兽,将人类文明的种子 延续到了宇宙尽头,以冷酷的姿态彰显了末日时代新人类的价值诉求与新的 道德标准。罗辑作为最后一位面壁人,打破人类文明的道德底线,通过对"黑 暗森林"法则的领悟,毁灭了187J3X1行星。同时也将地球文明与三体文明 所有的生命置于宇宙打击的危险面前, 在大众的误解与声讨中, 建立了地球 与三体两个文明之间的威慑平衡,以一己之力拯救了"三体"危机之下的人 类。如果说罗辑建立了新人类的伦理标准,那么维德和章北海则是继罗辑之 后新人类伦理道德的典型代表。作为执剑人候选人之一的维德冷酷得几乎毫 无人性,连智子也惊叹他为"那个魔鬼"(刘慈欣,《死神永生》 146)。 在维德以人类文明生存为第一需求的伦理意识下,为了实现阶梯计划,他残 忍地杀害自己的属下瓦季姆。为了防止程心阻碍自己的计划,他又冷酷地设 计了一场谋杀。用他自己的话说: "你们都很出色,但挡道的棋子都应清除。 我只能前进,不择手段地前进"(刘慈欣,《死神永生》96)。与维德一样, 章北海作为脱离人类伦理道德体系的负面英雄形象,以其身上体现的"兽性 因子"诠释了作为一名军人的冷酷与责任。他先是通过隐藏自己的"失败主义" 思想,冷静地杀害三名同事后又劫持了"自然选择"号成功叛逃。在舰队进 入宇宙"黑暗战役"时,为了争夺内部资源,保证人类文明的延续,章北海 又凭借着其惯有的理性,对诞生于太空中新人类的伦理形态作出了清晰的定 位,冷酷地向其他几支尚存的舰队发起了攻击。章北海完成了他延续地球文 明种子的任务,新人类也正式诞生:"无际的太空就这样在它黑暗的怀抱中 哺育出了黑暗的新人类"(刘慈欣,《死神永生》421)。

如果我们用海德格尔(Martin Heidegger)的"解蔽论"<sup>1</sup>对罗辑、章北海、 维德等代表的新人类进行分析,可以发现他们身上体现的"兽性因子"是"促 逼"的产物。人类进入文明危机时,文明生存促逼着人物进行伦理选择,要 么给岁月以文明,要么给文明以岁月。但"做兽既是人的本能反应,也是人 的自然倾向"(7),生存作为人的原欲是罗辑、章北海及维德等人作出伦理 选择的决定性因素。在黑暗森林的"摆置"下,保存人类的文明火种"促逼" 着他们放弃道德标准, 打破伦理禁忌, 在自由意志和非理性意志的控制下作 出了骇人听闻的伦理选择。如果罗辑、维德尚是新人类胚胎的雏形,那么以 章北海为代表太空舰队则完成了真正意义上的太空新人类的蜕变。

有趣的是,程心作为人类道德价值体系的坚定信仰者,代表了伦理选择 阶段具有伦理与道德意识的传统人类。程心因为爱而被民众推为执剑人,却 也同样因为爱将人类推上了毁灭的深渊。而作为人类道德价值体系对立面的 罗辑、维德及章北海等新人类,却以身上体现的"兽性因子"多次拯救人类 于水火。这不得不引发人们思考,当人类文明遭遇危机时,人类普世道德的 可靠性与适用性。

文学伦理学批评提出,"道德带有历史的特性,在不同时代、不同种 族、不同地区有不同的道德。在不同的历史阶段,道德标准与道德内涵可能 不同"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》248)。刘慈欣也通过章北海之口 表达了这一观点: "新的文明在诞生,新的道德也在形成"(《黑暗森林》 420)。当我们的文明需要牺牲部分来保存整体的时候,以人类普世道德构建 的"人文社会是十分脆弱的"(《黑暗森林》405),这时就需要新的道德 与伦理了。关于道德的标准,斯宾诺莎(Baruch de Spinoza)提出"自然法 理"之说,"我们是万有自然的一部分,所以我们遵从自然的法理"2。他认 为遵守自然法理就是德性,而道德意味着遵守秩序和控制情感。既然"黑暗 森林"法则成为了新的文明伦理规范,那么坚持"生存是文明的第一需要" (刘慈欣,《黑暗森林》441)就是遵守自然法理,就是道德的旨归。从这个 角度来看,罗辑、章北海、维德等人的伦理选择虽然违背了人类的道德价值 标准,但是却符合文明新的伦理规范,是遵守自然法理的德性行为。反之, 程心始终以人类中心主义构建的伦理道德自居,坚信爱可以拯救一切,无视 作为执剑人的责任和义务,最终以人类文明的陨落,宣告了人类道德的失 效。在《死神永生》中,刘慈欣就对道德与生存这个伦理两难命题作出了最 后判词: "失去人性,失去很多;失去兽性,失去一切"(刘慈欣,《黑暗 森林》382)。

<sup>1</sup> 参见 马丁·海德格尔:《演讲与论文集》,孙周兴译,北京:生活·读书·新知三联书店, 2005年,第4-28页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 斯宾诺莎: 《伦理学》,贺麟译,北京:商务印书馆,1958年,第80-85页。

## 二、技术至上: 科学选择阶段的伦理环境

吃人还是毁灭? 选择人性还是兽性? 刘慈欣通过对科学选择阶段暗恐伦 理环境的塑造,对"吃人"这一存在的合理性进行了分析探讨。以程心为代 表的旧人类及以罗辑等为代表的新人类,都经历了伦理选择及科学选择两个 文明阶段。在以道德为主流价值的伦理选择阶段,程心的"善"是文明进步 的体现,但在以技术为标准的科学选择阶段,程心的"善"则成为文明毁灭 的帮凶。反之, "吃人"在伦理选择阶段是违背人性的罪恶, 但在科学选择 阶段却是文明生存的正常需求。正如刘慈欣在回答江晓原为何读者会认同自 己"吃人"的伦理选择时说道:"正因为我表现出一种冷酷的但又是冷静的 理性。而这种理性是合理的。你选择的是人性,而我选择的是生存,读者认 同了我的这种选择。套用康德的一句话: 敬畏头顶的星空, 但对心中的道德 不以为然"(刘慈欣,《刘慈欣谈科幻》42)。

文学伦理学批评提出, 伦理环境是文学产生和存在的历史条件, 对文学 作品中的伦理选择进行价值判断应该"回到历史的伦理现场,进入文学的伦 理环境或伦理语境中,站在当时的伦理立场上解读和阐释文学作品"(聂珍 钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》7),"而不是进行抽象或者主观的道德评价" (聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评及其它——聂珍钊自选集》12)。回归程心、 罗辑等新旧人类人做出不同伦理选择时所面临的伦理环境现场,不难发现 "吃人"具有其存在的合理性。罗辑是在他冬眠一百八十五年后醒来的,程 心被推为第二任执剑人,是在她冬眠了二百六十四年的威慑纪元61年。"在 三体危机出现后的一个世纪,曾经在黄金时代生活过的人们都离开了人世" (刘慈欣,《黑暗森林》276)。像程心、罗辑、章北海、维德等存活下来少 数公元人<sup>1</sup>都是通过人体冬眠技术来到了新的文明时期。在这个科学技术得到 空前发展的时代,人们不仅发明了永动机,而且可以合成粮食,衣服、鞋子 甚至手纸都能当作电脑使用; 国家遭到消亡, 太空舰队崛起成为独立的政治 和经济实体;传统婚姻家庭解体,科学人2大量出现。这些科学人生活在一千 多米的地下,无论男女都"面容白嫩姣好,长发披肩,身材苗条柔软,仿佛 骨头都是香蕉做的,举止是那么优雅轻柔,说话声音随着微风传过来,细软 而甜美"(刘慈欣,《死神永生》92),他们是经伦理教诲和科学优化后的 文明人。人类文明基本从伦理选择步入了科学选择阶段,科学技术替代伦理 道德成为新的社会规范。在技术标准决定一切的科学选择阶段3,去道德化、 科学化是其主要特征。当伦理道德失去了原有的教诲功能,科学技术就成为 了拯救文明的有力支撑。对此,刘慈欣曾提出,在大灾难来临之际,"技术

<sup>1</sup> 在《三体》三部曲中,伦理选择阶段的伦理人都被称为公元人。

<sup>2</sup> 文学伦理学批评认为,科学选择以科学人的大量出现为标志。

<sup>3</sup> 文学伦理学批评认为,在科学选择阶段,科学技术不仅将极大的影响人的生活方式,而且从 根本上改变人的生活观念及生存方式,并导致现有的伦理道德逐渐被技术标准所取代。

可以做到把人类用一种超越道德底线的方法组织起来,用牺牲部分的代价来 保留整体"(刘慈欣,《刘慈欣谈科幻》37)。文学伦理学批评也认为, "无论是自然选择、伦理选择还是科学选择,选择的目的是为了人的自我生 存、改进、优化、繁衍"(22),"如果人类的最终目的不是保持人性,而 是为了繁衍下去。那么它(技术)就不是邪恶的"(刘慈欣,《刘慈欣谈科 幻》38)。因此,坚持技术理性的罗辑、维德、章北海等新人类总能解救人 类于水火 , 而坚守普世道德的程心却多次置人类于危险境地。这主要是由人 类进入科学选择阶段所处的伦理环境所决定的。

黑暗森林法则作为整个《三体》三部曲的伦理环境, 既体现了科学选择 阶段技术至上的社会规范,也为人物的伦理选择提供了价值判断的依据。黑暗 森林法则即"宇宙就是一座黑暗森林,每个文明都是带枪的猎人,像幽灵般潜 行于林间,轻轻拨开挡路的树枝,竭力不让脚步发出一点儿声音,连呼吸都小 心翼翼〔……〕在这片森林中,他人就是地狱,就是永恒的威胁,任何暴露自 己存在的生命都将很快被消灭"(刘慈欣,《黑暗森林》446-447)。与《阿 凡达》《沙丘》等科幻小说描写的拟人化伦理环境不同,刘慈欣摒弃了本体论 同一性的思维方式,他不再从人类中心主义出发将伦理环境道德化、人文化, 而是强调他者文明的异质性与排他性。他将以往熟悉的善良、正义、和平等人 类文明构建起来的伦理道德标准清零,将整个宇宙重新定义为零道德的黑暗森 林。在这片黑暗森林中,他者即地狱,任何暴露自身生命形式存在的行为都将 受到高熵文明的毁灭。这种冷酷的书写方式,体现了刘慈欣对萨特"自我一他 者"伦理关系的认同和反思。萨特认为"他者"即"他我", "他我"和"自 我"一样,都是自为的存在。"自我"和"他我"为了保持各自的主体地位, 会相互形成一种对立和冲突关系。"自我"对"他我"开展支配和奴役,"他 我"对"自我"构成约束与阻碍。因此,萨特向世人发出警告:"地狱,就是 他人"(萨特 283)。

当叶文洁向三体文明发射地球坐标后,地球文明作为他者身份进入三体 文明的视野, 对他者的陌生与惧怕, 迫使三体文明将地球文明置于自我的客 观对立面。为了保持自我文明生存的主体性,三体文明先是通过智子锁死了 地球文明的基础科学, 防止地球文明技术爆炸。之后为了一劳永逸地消除地 球文明这个他者阻碍,毫不犹豫地对地球文明展开了进攻和侵略。地球文明 作为三体文明眼中的他者,为了自我生存的主体性,一次又一次试图向三体 文明这个强大的他者发出挑战与反抗。当罗辑以暴露地球和三体的宇宙坐标 为威慑时,三体文明出于保护自我的需要,暂时放弃毁灭地球文明的计划。 因为在黑暗森林法则的伦理环境下,对话即暴露,他人就是地狱,任何宇宙 文明一旦暴露自己的坐标,即将受到高熵文明的蚕食。在宇宙这座黑暗森林中, 他者文明成为具有威胁性的群体形象, 宇宙文明只有在自我与他者的对立与 冲突中, 才能寻求自我生存的主体性。

这种"他人就是地狱"的伦理环境, 既突出了自我与他者的对立关系, 强调了他者的排外倾向,也暗含了自我对他者异质性的拒绝与恐惧。这种对 他者的排外与恐外情绪,源自于潜意识中我们对他者的主体认识。"我们 (即便是出自善意)从民族、国家、地域、宗教、种族、性别、性向、意识 形态等等所谓纯一的社会观(social homogeneity)出发,常常将'非我'的 个人或群体视为他人(the other)、外人或陌生人(stranger)"(童明 115),他 人、外人或陌生人成了我们认识自我的外部客观物,"'外人'或与之相关 的'异域'或'异质'(foreignness)既让'我们'好奇,又让'我们'产生 排斥、厌恶甚至仇恨"(115),因此,无意识中,我们就将对他人、外人或 陌生人的排外倾向视为理所应当。童明教授认为,这种"对'外人'或'异 域'的好奇兼拒绝的情绪,实际上是'我们'自己心里种种暗恐的复现" (115) .

暗恐(unheimlich)<sup>1</sup>最先由弗洛伊德(Freud Sigmund)提出,弗洛伊德 认为暗恐是"压抑的复现"(return or recurrence of the repressed)的另一种 表述,"暗恐是一种惊恐情绪,但又可以追溯到很久前就已相识并熟悉的事 情"(515)。也就是说,我们当下遭遇到的陌生的惊恐情绪都存在着以往 熟悉的心理源头,"熟悉的与不熟悉的并列、非家与家相关联的这种二律背 反,就构成心理分析意义上的暗恐"(童明 106)。因此,暗恐包含双重语 义: "对陌生事物产生熟悉的怪异感或对熟悉的事物产生陌生、恐惧感"<sup>2</sup>。 暗恐通过"复影"(double)这一心理机制生成,既存在于个人意识中,也 存在于社会文化中。"对魔鬼的惧怕、对神灵的崇拜,只是暗恐的两面" (童明 111)。在《三体》三部曲中,猜疑链、技术爆炸构成了宇宙黑暗森林 法则,对他者文明的惧怕和对科学技术的崇拜构成了宇宙伦理环境暗恐的两 面。

一方面, 黑暗森林法则将外星文明设定为零道德状态的他者, 在否定 人类伦理道德有效性的同时,也否定了文明之间沟通的可能性。因为对话即 暴露,他人即地狱,这是对沟通作为文明进化和演变主要方式的一种消解, 是一种来自陌生"他者"不确定性和威胁性的生存恐惧。这种恐惧既让我们 觉得陌生,因为它不同于以往的任何情绪体验,又让我们感到熟悉,因为它 类似于乱纪元时期三体人对生存的担忧,人类面临自然灾害时对死亡的恐 惧。对他者文明的惧怕其实就是文明面临灾难时恐惧心理的复现。这种恐惧 的复现不仅存在于文明个体意识的情绪体验中,同样也存在于文明的整个社 会文化中。黑暗森林法则可以追溯到达尔文提出的丛林法则,实际上,黑暗 森林法则是自然选择阶段的丛林法则的复现。在《物种起源》中,达尔文阐

<sup>1 &</sup>quot;暗恐"一词也被译为"非家幻觉"(The Uncanny),本文主要以"暗恐"为分析术语。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 郭雯: 《克隆人科幻小说的文学伦理学批评研究》,南京:南京大学出版社,2019年, 第 89-91 页。

述了生物进化和生存竞争的规律,提出了弱肉强食的丛林法则。刘慈欣则将 丛林法则搬至整个宇宙,提出了黑暗森林法则。黑暗森林法则以丛林法则为 基础,突出生存作为文明的第一需要,给整个宇宙涂上了一层既陌生又熟悉 的阴影,营造了一种"熟悉的与不熟悉的并列、非家与家相关联"(童明 106)的"暗恐"效果,同时也启发人们进一步思考: 当科学选择摒弃了伦理 道德后,人类是否会回归到自然选择阶段的文明状态? 刘慈欣正是试图通过 描写暗恐的伦理环境带领人们进入对未来文明和集体的思考。

另一方面,文明对科学技术的崇拜构成了黑暗森林法则暗恐的另一面。 在以黑暗森林法则统摄的伦理环境下,科技的发达程度决定了宇宙文明在生 物链中的位置, 追求科技的突破与进步成为文明间竞争的生存意识。在以技 术为导向的黑暗森林中,科学技术被宇宙文明奉为上帝和天神,只有得到了 上帝的庇佑, 文明才能在残酷的黑暗森林法则下赢得生存和延续的权利。在 《三体》三部曲中,刘慈欣就以细腻的笔触再现了地球文明对科学技术的无 比崇拜之情。当人类发现三体文明的探测器——水滴时,科学家们一致感 叹: "它的形状虽然简洁,但造型精妙绝伦,曲面上的每一个点都恰到好处 (……) 它给人一种感觉: 即使人类艺术家把一个封闭曲面的所有可能形态 平滑地全部试完,也找不出这样一个造型。它在所有的可能之外,即使柏拉 图的理想国中也没有送样完美的形状(……)"(刘慈欣,《黑暗森林》 367) 这种对科学技术的崇拜源自于对强大力量的畏惧,是对他者文明惧怕的 "复现"。高熵文明出于对技术爆炸的恐惧,必将对低熵文明进行打击和毁 灭。技术既是宇宙文明的上帝和天神,又是威胁文明生存的敌人与恶魔。所 以弗洛伊德认为"但丁《炼狱篇》的死魂灵或莎士比亚《哈姆雷特》《麦克 白》《凯撒大帝》固然阴暗可怖,但这些未必就比荷马的神灵的欢乐世界更 加暗恐"(Freud 530-531),对科学技术的崇拜与对他者文明的惧怕只是暗恐 的一体两面。刘慈欣正是通过构建黑暗森林这个"暗恐"的伦理环境,在恐 惧与崇拜的交织情感中将读者与故事主体疏离, 让读者在熟悉感、怪异感、 恐惧感中达到对人物伦理选择伦与伦理身份的理解与共鸣。

#### 三、构建宇宙政治平衡:宇宙选择阶段的文明新形态

黑暗森林法则否定了人类道德的普适性,将人类文明的出路指向了技术。 技术既是科学选择的标准也是科学选择的结果,不断促使人类文明科学化程 度越来越高。《三体》三部曲通过巨大的时空叙事,以新的文明阶段的出现 重新带领人们进一步思考: 当把人类文明置于广阔的宇宙之下后, 在个体文 明与宇宙母体构建的宇宙政治面前,科学技术是否能继续构建起新的文明形 态?人类文明如何避免走向终结?

《死神永生》记录了当人类文明进入647号宇宙时间线后,科学技术在巨 大的宇宙时间面前失效,就连神级文明——歌者文明等,也无法通过高度发达

的科学技术保证文明的最终生存。与人类文明终将迎来科学选择阶段一样,人 类文明继科学选择阶段后也走向了一段新的历史发展时期——宇宙选择阶段。 在这一文明阶段,人类完成了科学选择,获得了新的技术身份,进行了新的技 术选择。但决定人类文明是否能够生存的不再仅仅是科学技术,同时还有存在 于浩瀚宇宙中的秩序规范。正如关一帆在宇宙真相面前感叹道: "黑暗森林状 态对于我们是生存的全部,对于宇宙却只是一件小事","宇宙规律是最可怕 的武器, 当然也是最有效的防御手段"(刘慈欣, 《死神永生》470)。当科 学技术已经无法解决文明的生存问题,建立在宇宙规律基础之上的宇宙政治1 构建了新的秩序规范,并作为新的希望成为文明生存的寄托。归零者作为宇宙 的管理者,企图通过"重新启动宇宙,回到田园时代"(刘慈欣,《死神永 生》476),以此保证高级文明的生存,但在"小宇宙"与"大宇宙"构建的 宇宙政治面前,技术显得无力,"对于归零者来说,它们的事业最终将由宇宙 本身来完成"(478)。如果科学选择不是人类文明历史的终点,那么"自然 选择解决人的形式问题, 伦理选择解决人的本质问题, 科学选择解决人的科学 化问题"(1),宇宙选择将通过宇宙政治解决人的最终生存这个问题。

与《三体》前两部不同, 《死神永生》不再围绕"道德还是生存"这个 伦理两难命题展开思想实验,而是将目光指向了以人类、三体为代表的个体 文明与宇宙母体的政治关系。关于"宇宙政治", "西方过去主要体现在基 督教思想家和文学家的论述和想象中(如奥古斯丁的《上帝之城》和但丁的 《神曲》)""东方则主要体现在佛教经典对'他方世界'的描述和由此发 展出的通俗文学的想象中(如《西游记》等)"(刘志荣 33),随着科学技 术的发展, "宇宙政治"几乎淡出了人们的视野,取而代之的是现实主义政 治学。"基本上,一提到'政治学'和'社会学',人们的反应都限制在现 实世界已知的地球人之中,这从想象力和思维的开阔性上看,无论如何是一 种退守"(33-34)。《三体》三部曲通过宇宙政治学2第二公理,设置"大宇 宙"与"小宇宙"的生存冲突,对个体文明与宇宙母体可能构成的政治关系 及宇宙秩序进行了探讨,对文明生存的目的和意义进行了终极追问,"这在 视野和胸襟上都是值得称道的"(34)。

罗辑提出的宇宙政治学第二公理,即宇宙质量守恒定律:"文明不断增 长和扩张,但宇宙中的物质总量保持不变"(刘慈欣,《黑暗森林》5)。宇 宙质量守恒定律一方面决定了个体文明与宇宙母体的政治关系,另一方面形成 了整个宇宙的政治秩序。在宇宙选择阶段,宇宙作为文明生存的母体,看似与

之间存在一种特定关系,与公民与国家的关系相对应。宇宙作为一个整体,通过构建宇宙秩序维 持不同的"小"之间稳定而有序的关系。宇宙政治不仅赋予"小"更大的利益关注,而且将政治 生活理解为对一种宏大的理性宇宙学存在秩序的参与,宇宙政治家的责任就是不断领悟理解关于 美德、荣耀和宇宙秩序的永恒真理。以上内容均为笔者自译。参见 Sean McConnell, "Magnitudo Animi and Cosmic Politics in Cicero's De re Publica." The Classical Journal 1 (2017): 45-70.

<sup>2</sup> 在《三体》三部曲中,宇宙政治学又被称为宇宙社会学。

各个文明之间形成了整体与个体的二元对立模式,但由于宇宙文明之间的"独 异性"(Singularity), "我们便无法再用过去简单的'一体/多元'这一二元 对立来审视宇宙总体以及宇宙中诸文明的个体的命运"(曾军 90)。一方面 宇宙母体是由无数个彼此互不交往的文明个体所组成; 另一方面, 任何一次 宇宙文明之间的冲突都可能破坏宇宙政治平衡,最终带来宇宙母体的毁灭。技 术爆炸作为宇宙文明生存的关键,是文明进步的重要标志,但是在宇宙政治面 前,技术不能决定一切。宇宙文明如果为了生存只追求科技的进步而导致宇宙 的生态平衡被破坏,那么生存竞争的最后都是失败者。在《三体》三部曲中, 歌者文明、地球文明最终都面临宇宙坍缩的危险,这更像是"人与自然"关系 的一种"复影"。这就意味着,在宇宙选择阶段,已经不能仅仅依赖在科学选 择阶段形成的技术竞争关系。文明为了生存,就必须与他者文明、宇宙母体建 立起新的存在关系。对此, 刘慈欣对人类在科学选择阶段构建的技术身份进行 了解构,探索了宇宙选择阶段人类新的"斯芬克斯之谜"。当科学人完成科学 选择进入宇宙选择阶段后,人类获得的技术身份中增加了被宇宙规律赋予的政 治身份,宇宙哲学的中心不再只有科学与伦理的矛盾,还有宇宙母体与文明个 体之间的政治关系。因此,如何维护宇宙政治平衡,成为宇宙哲学需要探讨的 核心。

《三体》三部曲中的宇宙政治是建立在达尔文的进化论基础之上—— "其实也是运行在一个比宇宙文明公理更简单的法则下:适者生存"(刘慈 欣,《黑暗森林》198),而达尔文的"适者生存"这一命题根本上来自霍布 斯(Thomas Hobbes)。因此,可以说《三体》三部曲中的宇宙政治其实就是 霍布斯自然法的宇宙版。霍布斯的自然法提出,自我保存是最基本的自然权 利,在没有法律限制的情况下,对于他者的潜在威胁,只能自己判断,"而 最安全的方式,就是假定周围的人都是潜在的危险,从而尽快消灭之",这 与罗辑领悟的宇宙政治学的第一公理即黑暗森林法则遥相呼应,也"几乎完 美地符合德国政治法学家卡尔•施米特颇富争论性同时又不断被提起的两个 洞见: '政治就是划分敌友'(《政治的概念》)和'主权就是决定非常状 态'(《政治的神学》)"(刘志荣 35)。黑暗森林法则存在的本质是"猜 疑链",叶文洁对地球文明不信任所以向三体文明发射了"求救"信号,三 体文明猜疑地球文明可能技术爆炸,故用智子锁死了地球基础科学。由于文 明之间的相互不信任,交流与爱成为不可能,文明共存遭到消解。如何打破 黑暗森林法则建立新的秩序规范?霍布斯认为"在没有一个共同权力使大家 慑服的时候,人们便处在所谓的战争状态之下"(94),为了避免进入战争 状态,人们应该自愿放弃战争权利,通过公认的第三方,缔结社会契约,建 立和平社会。那么,在"大宇宙"与"小宇宙"独异性的环境下,文明是否 自愿放弃战争权利以及是否存在一个宇宙文明公认的第三方,成为宇宙政治

<sup>1</sup> 参见 吴飞: "黑暗森林中的哲学——我读《三体》", 《哲学动态》3(2019):17。

是否得以平衡的关键。

在科学选择阶段, 程心的自以为是给整个人类文明带来了毁灭性的灾 难,到了宇宙选择阶段,刘慈欣重新寄予这一人物新的希望。他通过程心这 一人物形象强调了责任对于文明生存的重要性——"我的一生,就是在攀登 一道责任的阶梯"(刘慈欣,《死神永生》508)。与伦理身份会赋予主体 不同的伦理责任一样,不同的政治身份也会赋予主体不同内容的政治责任。 程心虽然屡次因为爱未能履行作为执剑人的责任,但当宇宙母体即将面临坍 缩,她坚定地选择了响应"回归运动"。为了整个宇宙的涅槃,她放弃了保 存个体文明生存的唯一希望,体现了程心政治责任的回归。另一方面,归零 者作为宇宙的神级文明形态,同时也是宇宙母体的"管理者",是建立宇宙 秩序的第三方。他们发起的回归运动,既是对宇宙母体的保护,也为宇宙文 明生存提供可能。"其行为准则已然不是'黑暗森林法则',而正是这一法 则在整体空间中不能自洽的证明,而一旦有了关注整体的超越性思维,其可 能的政治行为方式就必然会包括联合, '黑暗森林法则'就必须从另一角度 进行修正——人类道德领域的自我牺牲和奉献精神等等"(刘志荣 37)。虽 然,刘慈欣没有给三体故事设定一个确定的结局,却通过构建宇宙契约与履 行宇宙责任的政治关系探索出了一条建立宇宙政治平衡的可行路径。

黑暗森林法则虽然否定了人类道德的有效性,提出了"他人就是地狱"的 生存伦理观,但地狱也是有出口的,萨特认为"人是自由的,人的命运取决于 自己的选择"(8)。在《死神永生》中,刘慈欣通过建立宇宙契约和召唤责 任回归对黑暗森林法则进行了重新考量,完成了宇宙文明从与他者为敌到与他 者相依的政治关系的转变。与他者相依意味着与他者共存,为他者而存在,这 就要求个体文明必须在"共存"伦理原则的前提下,在整体利益与个体利益、 义务与权利等之间确立合理的政治互动关系。不同于中国传统文化提倡的"礼 之用,和为贵"(于丹 152)集体主义精神,这种"共存"的政治关系虽然也 强调整体意识,但并非要将集体利益凌驾于个体利益之上。因为宇宙文明之间 的独异性要求个体利益与整体利益互利互赢、协调发展、它突破了中国传统文 化以礼为核心,绝对拒斥个人利益的极左"集体主义"精神,体现出了刘慈欣 对新的集体主义政治关系的思考。

总之, 当人类完成科学选择进入宇宙选择阶段后, 随着新的文明形态的 出现,人类也将获得不同的身份,进行新的选择。文学伦理学批评提出,"在 具体的文学作品中,伦理的核心内容是人与人、人与社会以及人与自然之间 形成的被接受和认可的伦理关系, 以及在这种关系的基础上形成的道德秩序 和维系这种秩序的各种规范。文学的任务就是描写这种伦理关系和道德秩序 的变化及其引发的各种问题和导致的不同结果,为人类文明进步提供经验和 教诲"(聂珍钊,《文学伦理学批评导论》13)。《三体》三部曲的意义就 在于,它通过设置多个思想实验,将生存与人类道德价值体系置于宇宙伦理 环境下进行拷问,对道德标准进行了重新定义,对科技、伦理、政治与文明 的生存关系进行了重新思考。当伦理上升到种族群体,依据的不再是个体自 身的价值判断,而应从整体出发,用政治来解决伦理中的道德问题。在刘慈 欣看来,认清宇宙政治环境,遵守宇宙政治秩序就是一种德性。因为为了保 存"宇宙母体","小宇宙"的牺牲不足挂齿。这种以宇宙整体的存亡为己 任的宇宙观已然突破了人类伦理善恶爱恨的边界。同时也说明,刘慈欣想在《三 体》三部曲中探讨的不仅仅是道德伦理困境问题,更是不同伦理环境下以人类、 三体为代表的个体文明与宇宙母体的政治关系: 当道德与生存形成伦理悖论, 技术指向了一条解困之路,但也许最终将会通过政治来解决伦理中的道德问 题。

#### **Works Cited**

陈颀: "文明冲突与文化自觉——《三体》的科幻与现实", 《中国科幻文学再出发》, 李广 益主编。重庆: 重庆大学出版社, 2016年, 第1-49页。

[Chen Qi. "Civilization Conflict and Cultural Consciousness—Science Fiction and Reality in the Three-Body Problem." New Start of Chinese Science Fiction Literature, edited by Li Guangyi. Chongqing: Chongqing UP, 2016: 1-49.]

Freud Sigmund. "The Uncanny." The Critical Tradition: Classic Texts and Contemporary Trends (Third edition), translated by James Strachey. Boston: Bedford/St. Martin's, 2007.

霍布斯: 《利维坦》,黎思复、黎廷弼译。北京:商务印书馆,2020年。

[Hobbes. Leviathan, translated by Li Sifu and Li Tingbi. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2020.]

海勒: 《我们何以成为后人类》,刘宇清译。北京:北京大学出版社,2017年。

[Heller. How We Became Post-human, translated by Liu Yuqing. Beijing: Peking UP, 2017.]

刘慈欣: 《黑暗森林》。重庆: 重庆出版社,2014年。

[Liu Cixin. The Dark Forest. Chongqing: Chongqing Publishing House, 2014.]

--: 《死神永生》。重庆: 重庆出版社, 2010 年。

[—. Death's End. Chongqing: Chongqing Press, 2010.]

一一: 《刘慈欣谈科幻》。武汉: 湖北科学技术出版社, 2013年。

[—. Liu Cixin on Science Fiction. Wuhan: Hubei Science and Technology Press, 2013.]

刘志荣: 《此间因缘》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2014年。

[Liu Zhirong. Karma Here. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评及其它——聂珍钊自选集》。武汉:华中师范大学出版社,2012年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Criticism of Ethical Literary Criticism and Others: Selected Works of Nie Zhenzhao. Wuhan: Central China Normal UP, 2012.]

一:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[—. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

聂珍钊、王松林主编:《文学伦理学批评理论研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。

- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin, eds. Theoretical Research on Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2020.]
- 萨特:《萨特读本》,沈志明等译。北京:人民文学出版社,2012年。
- [Sartre. Sartre Reader, translated by Shen Zhiming et al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 2012.]
- 宋明炜: "弹星者与面壁者: 刘慈欣的科幻世界", 《上海文化》3(2011):17-30。
- [Song Mingwei. "The Man Who Shot the Star and the Man Who Faced the Wall: Liu Cixin's Science Fiction World." Shanghai Culture 3 (2011): 17-30.]
- Suvin, Darko. "Estrangement and Cognition." Theories of Science Fiction, edited by James Gunn and Matthew Candelaria. Lanham. Maryland: Scarecrow Press, 2005. 23-35.
- 童明: "暗恐/非家幻觉", 《外国文学》4(2011): 106-116。
- [Tong Ming. "Dark fear/Illusion of non-home." Foreign Literature 4 (2011): 106-116.]
- 于丹:《〈论语心得〉》。北京:生活•读书•新知三联书店,2017年。
- [Yu Dan. Reflections on the Analects of Confucius. Beijing: Life, Reading, New Knowledge Sanlian Bookstore, 2017.]
- 曾军: "《三体》的'Singularities'或科幻全球化时代的中国逻辑",《文艺理论研究》36(2016): 84-93。
- [Zeng Jun. "Singularities' or Chinese Logic in the Era of Sci-fi Globalization in the Three-Body Problem." Studies in Literary Theory 36 (2016): 84-93.]

# 村上春树《刺杀骑士团长》的文学世界建构方式 The Construction of Literary World in Haruki Murakami's *Killing Commendatore*

任 洁 (Ren Jie)

内容摘要: 意识和隐喻是解读村上春树文学的两个主要概念。在《刺杀骑士团长》中,村上春树不仅有意在"意识—理念—日本贵族—骑士团长"之间建构逻辑联系,而且又将其解构,导致能指脑概念与所指脑概念表层关系的断裂。在同一伦理环境中,能指脑概念与所指脑概念的配对关系因个体意识而失去稳定性,形成了超越伦理环境限制的更加自由的配对空间。同时,村上春树还通过地上→地下(…地下)→地上的场所转换,展现隐喻意义的流变性特征,继而强调意义生成过程中隐喻主体的决定性作用。在《刺杀骑士团长》中,村上春树用意识和隐喻校正之前的诸多伦理思考,赋予其新的伦理内涵。这也是村上春树建构村上式文学世界的独特方式。

关键词:文学伦理学批评;村上春树;《刺杀骑士团长》;意识;隐喻作者简介:任洁,文学博士,浙江大学外国语学院特聘副研究员,主要从事文学伦理学批评、日本近现代文学、东亚社会与文明研究。本文为2022年度浙江省哲学社会科学规划年度重点课题"'四书'对日本古代文学的影响研究"【项目批号:22NDJC001Z】、国家社科基金重大招标项目"当代西方伦理批评文献的整理、翻译与研究"【项目批号:19ZDA292】和浙江大学"重要国家和区域研究"专项项目"环波罗的海国家语言与文化研究"【项目批号:S20220211】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** The Construction of Literary World in Haruki Murakami's *Killing Commendatore* 

**Abstract:** Consciousness and metaphor are the two main concepts for interpreting Haruki Murakami's literary. In *Killing Commendatore*, Haruki Murakami does not only intentionally construct a logical connection of "consciousness—idea—Japanese nobleman—commendatore," but also deconstructs it, resulting in a breakdown of the superficial relationship between signifier and signified brain concepts. Within the same ethical environment, the pairing of signifier and signified brain concepts loses its stability due to the intervention of individual consciousness, thus forming a freer space for pairing which transcends the limits of ethical environment.

Meanwhile, Haruki Murakami shows the rheological property of metaphorical meaning through the transformation of place from aboveground to underground (...underground) then back to above ground, and afterwards emphasizes the decisive role of the metaphorical subject in the process of generating meanings. In Killing Commendatore, Haruki Murakami uses consciousness and metaphor to correct many of his previous ethical reflections and give them new ethical connotations. This is precisely the unique way in which Haruki Murakami constructs the Murakami-style literary world.

**Keywords:** ethical literary criticism; Huruki Murakami; *Killing Commendatore*; consciousness; metaphor

Author: Ren Jie is an associate research fellow at the School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China). Her main research interests are ethical literary criticism, modern Japanese literature, and East Asian society and civilization (Email: renjie 85@163.com).

村上春树(Haruki Murakami,下略称"村上"),1949年生,是至今仍 活跃于日本文坛的多产作家。2017年出版的《刺杀骑士团长》(『騎士団長殺し』), 下略称《刺杀》)是村上最新一部"分量十足的长篇"。与市场热销形成鲜 明对比的是,《刺杀》因与村上过去作品之间存在"类似"<sup>2</sup>而在评论界毁誉 参半<sup>3</sup>。持积极评价的一方认为,《刺杀》是一部"调动了村上春树迄今为止 所有故事形式和道具的集大成之作";而持批评态度的一方则认为,村上"已 失掉了他的魔法", "作品中除大量的信息以及如同'维基百科'般的历史 性描写之外,丝毫看不到主人公的成长"。4不论题材、主题、人物、环境、 情节,还是结构、语言等,《刺杀》与村上过去的作品特别是长篇小说之间 确实存在某种程度的类似。村上认为,作家"每隔几年重复一次"是极为正 常的事情,这或可成为支撑创作的"精神筋骨(backbone)"(川上未映子 村上春树 128)。但是,《刺杀》对之前作品的"重复"最早可追溯至村上的

<sup>1</sup> 参见新潮社宣传语 < https://www.shinchosha.co.jp/book/353432/ >。本文外文引文均出自笔 者译。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 井関優花: 「村上春樹作品における<色を持たない登場人物>像について: 『色彩 を持たない多崎つくると、彼の巡礼の年』『騎士団長殺し』を中心に」, 『富大比較文学』3  $(2020):1_{\circ}$ 

<sup>3</sup> 参见 平野芳信: 「村上春樹『騎士団長殺し』論: 即身仏/ビーフジャーキー」, 『近代 文学試論』56 (2018): 85。

See Daniel Morales, "'Killing Commendatore': Murakami' latest lacks inspired touch of earlier works." The Japan Times, 1 Apr. 2017 <a href="https://www.japantimes.co.jp/culture/2017/04/01/books/book-re-">https://www.japantimes.co.jp/culture/2017/04/01/books/book-re-</a> views/killing-commendatore-murakamis-latest-lacks-inspired-touch-earlier-works/#.W0KnAtIzY2w>.

初期作品,而且贯穿整个创作过程。这种类似带来的"似曾相识感"(Déjàvu) 尽管可以帮助读者"更容易理解小说", 但从根本上说是村上力图构建"作 为有机体"1的村上式文学世界的独特方式。我们感兴趣的,正是运用互文(自 互文)、改写、隐喻等方法,村上将毕生创作经验整合于《刺杀》之中,建 构村上式文学世界, 传递村上式思考。

# 一、理念显形:个体意识与集体意识的对抗

《刺杀》以第一人称讲述肖像画家"我"与妻子分手后借住在朋友的 父亲雨田具彦的老别墅期间发生的奇妙故事。"显形理念篇"(顕れるイデ ア編)<sup>2</sup>是第1部的标题。这里的"理念"分别对应日文"イデア"<sup>3</sup>和英文 "idea"。有学者认为,《刺杀》与柏拉图的理念论(Idealism)不无关联。4 村上果断否认这种看法,认为选择"理念"完全是出于对该词"音的回响" 的偏爱。理念的内涵大致与"意识"相近,与"无意识"相对。<sup>5</sup>在《刺杀》 中,无形的理念显形为骑士团长,一个从雨田具彦创作的名为《刺杀骑士团 长》的绘画中走下来的人物。据骑士团长自述,他虽与画中身着日本飞鸟时 意识一样,如果骑士团长"以木乃伊形象出现"(1:259)<sup>7</sup>,也不无可能。 "我"还发现,绘画中描绘的内容与雨田具彦喜爱的歌剧《唐璜》(Don Gioxanmi, 1787) 中的一幕类似,都是描绘或讲述年轻男子刺杀老年男子的场 面<sup>8</sup>。在意大利语版本的《唐璜》中,老年男子被指称为"IlCommendatore" (1:73),译成日文即"騎士団長"9,"我"由此推测显形的骑士团长以及 画中的日本贵族可能来自《唐璜》。骑士团长并不赞同,认为"倘若需要称 呼名字,称作骑士团长并不碍事"(1:258),而且这个假定形象"下次是什 么无从得知"(1:259)。

<sup>1</sup> 参见 跡上史郎: 「かひがひしからぬ『諸君』: 世界模型としての村上春樹『騎士団長殺 し』」, 『近代文学試論』56(2018): 97。

<sup>2</sup> 英文译为 "The Idea Made Visible"。

<sup>3</sup> 日文"アディア"中文译为"理念"。

<sup>4</sup> 参见 川上未映子、村上春树:《猫头鹰在黄昏起飞(村上春树访谈集)》,林少华译,上海: 上海译文出版社, 2019年, 第110页。

<sup>5</sup> 参见川上未映子、村上春树:《猫头鹰在黄昏起飞(村上春树访谈集)》,林少华译,上海: 上海译文出版社, 2019年, 第111-112页。

<sup>6</sup> 飞鸟时代是古代日本的一个历史时期,开始于公元592年日本第一个女天皇推古天皇就位, 终止于公元 710 年迁都平城京,上接古坟时代,下启奈良时代。

<sup>7</sup> 本文有关《刺杀骑士团长》的引文均出自村上春树,《刺杀骑士团长》,林少华译(上海: 上海译文出版社,2018年)。下文只标记部数和页码,不再一一说明。

<sup>8</sup> 在莫扎特歌剧《唐璜》中,浪荡公子唐璜要对美貌女子非礼,女子的父亲骑士团长赶来相 救而被唐璜当场刺杀。

<sup>9</sup> 日文"騎士団長"中文译为"骑士团长"。

小说有意建构"意识一理念一日本贵族一骑士团长"的逻辑联系并将其 解构,从而导致能指脑概念与所指脑概念表层关系的断裂。骑士团长强调, 显形为日本贵族并非出于个人选择,认为他"不过是照出人心的镜子"(2: 230), 其形象会因看他的人的不同而发生改变。理念在"我"的眼中显形为 骑士团长,在雨田具彦眼中可能显形为其他他"想看的东西"(2:230),如 1938年维也纳留学期间他计划刺杀的纳粹高官。在同一伦理环境里,能指脑概 念与所指脑概念之间的配对关系因个体意识的介入失去了稳定性,由此形成了 超越伦理环境限制的更加自由的配对空间。然而, 在未被意识化的古代社会, 人们依据由巫女或行使巫师职责的"王"作出的预言进行判断,个体意识并不 能直接指导实践。随着城市的出现和社会体制(system)的形成,无意识的行 为逐渐成为有意识的行为,作为无意识显形结果的巫女失去了原有价值。但 是,随之而来的并不是个体意识的觉醒,而是作为女巫替身的"集体意识"的 出现。在意识化之后的社会里,它显形为国家、制度等"刚性体制"(川上未 映子 村上春树 232)。骑士团长告诉"我",在理念世界里不存在第二人称 单数,即只有"你们"没有"你"。如果作为理念显形的体制是由"我们构筑 的东西"(川上未映子 村上春树 59),那么为何体制能站在统摄"我们"的 立场发出"你们"应如何去做的指令?

从道德层面说,一如"所有东西都有影子"(川上未映子、村上春树 232),体制亦包含无法消除的恶的部分。追根溯源,导致体制之恶的原因是 个体意识的缺失,或者说是个体对集体意识的无意识。村上曾公开谈起个体 意识缺失的可怕之处:

[……] 多数德国人在战争结束之初把自己也转到了受害者一边. 说自己也被希特勒骗了,被夺走了心影,以致倒了大霉—— 大体只有受 害者感觉剩了下来。日本情况也大同小异。日本人心里, 自己也是战争 受害者这种意识很强, 以致自己是施害者这一认识无论如何都要滞后。 〔……〕说来说去,最后在自己也受骗上当了那个地方不了了之 —— 天 皇不坏. 国民也不坏, 坏的是军部, 就像这个样子。这正是集体无意识 的可怕之处。(川上未映子 村上春树 65)

意识化之后的世界并不存在足以保障远古无意识有效运转的空间, 更无法消 除个体对"超越时代流淌在血管里"的"神话性"(川上未映子 村上春树 74)的依赖。集体意识所具有的"神话性"恰恰满足了个体对"简单、直接、 明快且有力"(村上春樹, 『村上春樹雑文集』 27) 的脑文本(brain text) 1

<sup>1</sup> 脑文本是一种特殊的生物形态,是人类在发明书写符号以及纸张之前储存信息的文本形式, 是人的大脑以记忆形式保存的对于世界客观事物的感知、认知、理解和思考。参见 聂珍钊:"文 学伦理学批评:口头文学与脑文本",《外国文学研究》2(2013):8-15,以及聂珍钊:"脑 文本和脑概念的形成机制与文学伦理学批评",《外国文学研究》5(2017):26-34。

的本能需求,这导致个体倾向于用某一"集体伦理(Moral)"替换掉"个体 伦理 (Maxim) "。

然而,将意识与无意识、个体意识与集体意识混淆起来,是极其危险 的事情。当集体意识显现出非理性特征时,个体很容易沦为非理性集体意识 的工具。非理性的集体意识会"把人诱入四面合围的场所,在那里边彻底洗 脑"(川上未映子 村上春树 237)。纵观日本近代发展史,天阜制演变成军 国主义,民主主义运动发展为残害同伴的联合赤军事件就是例证。所以,必 须"杀死"骑士团长1, "杀死"从未被意识化的世界中穿行而来的无意识, 以此唤起个体意识的觉醒。在《刺杀》中,雨田具彦将受纳粹迫害的经历置 换成富有象征性的日本绘画,将纳粹高官设置为飞鸟时代年老男子的形象, 并在绘画叙事中将其杀死,然后又借"我"之手在隐喻世界中将其杀死。其 实,"我"也不确定杀死的究竟是什么。它可能是纳粹高官,也可能是"在 南京城内把日本刀递给弟弟令其砍掉三名中国俘虏脑袋的年轻少尉",还可 能是"催生这一切的更为本源性的邪恶的什么"(2:235)。或许如骑士团长 所说,只是"之于诸君的我这个理念在那里气绝身亡〔……〕世界并不会因 之有所改变"(2:224)。即便如此,"我"也必须将"杀"付诸于行动。此 时,第一人称叙事者"我"与作者合二为一。作者力图以"故事这一版式" 进行"有效反击"(川上未映子、村上春树 236)的创作意图,促使着故事中 的"我"最终杀死了骑士团长。

## 二、隐喻流变:人性因子与兽性因子的较量

《刺杀》第2部的标题是"流变隐喻篇"(遷ろうメタファー編),英 译为 "The Shifting Metaphor", "隐喻"很自然地成为了小说除"理念"之 外的另一关键概念。实际上, 隐喻是村上文学惯用的修辞手法, 构成村上文 学"以混沌的语言替换混沌的现实"2的文体特色。相较于其他作品,《刺杀》 中的隐喻意义是"流变"的。村上认为,"固定的分析,必然哪里含有误差, 有时候是可以容许的误差,有时候则可能是极其危险的误差",所以"尽可 能不去碰静态分析〔……〕我努力在动态中观望流动性事物"(川上未映子 村上春树 184)。换言之,有必要在流变中把握流变着的隐喻。那么,何为流变? 《日本国语大辞典》有三种解释: 1、所居场所改变; 2、变心; 3、状态改变(如 盛衰、变色、花落等)。<sup>3</sup>其中"所居场所改变"的解释,符合"流变"在《刺杀》 中的意义所指。小说中场所的转换,主要表现为地上→地下(…地下)→地上, 即在现实世界与隐喻世界以及不同隐喻空间之间转换。场所的转换导致隐喻 意义从一种跳转至另一种,表现出流变性特征。

<sup>1</sup> 小说名即为"杀死骑士团长"。

<sup>2</sup> 参见村上春樹:『少年カフカ:村上春樹編集長』,東京:新潮社,2003年,第734頁。

<sup>3</sup> 参见『日本国語大辞典』縮印版第一卷,東京:小学館,1986年,第1379頁。

《刺杀》中的隐喻始于一个自称"隐喻"的"长面人"。与自称"理念" 的骑士团长类似,长面人也是从雨田具彦的绘画中走下来的人物。画中的长 面人从地面的封盖中"探头探脑"(1:74)地钻出来,"姑娘也好仆人也好都 没察觉"(1:72)他的存在。长面人还表现出一副想要"从个人角度把我诱去 地下世界"(1:75)的样子,以至于看画的"我"无论如何也无法把眼睛从他 身上移开。事实上,长面人确实起到了将"我"从地上(=现实世界)引入地 下(=隐喻世界)的作用。当被问到"到底是谁、是什么?"(2:238)的时 候,长面人回答说他是隐喻,其职责是将"东西与东西"(2:243)联结起来。 确切地说,长面人是隐喻在现实世界中显形的结果,他打开的正是从现实世 界通往隐喻世界的入口。而且,在钻回隐喻世界之前,长面人有意将"我" 正在寻找的女孩秋川真理惠,错称为"我"死去妹妹的名字"小径"。由此, 地上世界的秋川真理惠与地下世界的小径连接在一起。隐喻(=长面人)通过 意识(=秋川真理惠)唤起了"我"的无意识(=小径)。这种无意识仅仅停 留在"地下一层"的位置,那里固然"也有例如受过父母、兄弟或其他人虐待、 也就是受过精神创伤"的记忆,但《刺杀》"要去、想去的场所"在地下二层(川 上未映子 村上春树 63)。

随着"我"的双脚迈入地下黑暗,故事发生的场所切换至隐喻世界。在 隐喻世界里, "一切都是好像的东西〔……〕目力所及, 归终都是关联性的 产物"(2:270)。现实世界中的所有具体实在均作为隐喻出现在隐喻世界 里。例如,渡河前,无脸摆渡人向"我"索要的代价是现实世界中秋川真理 惠的企鹅护身符;渡过河,摆在"我"面前的唯一出路是"我"和妹妹曾一 起进过的富土风洞;洞穴里遗弃的旧矿灯恰巧与雨田具彦参与的学生地下组 织的名称有关;为"我"引路的女孩是雨田具彦绘画中的那个"以惧怯眼神 目击骑土团长被刺杀现场的年轻美女"(2:267-268),她还是《唐璜》中骑 士团长的女儿唐娜•安娜,女孩对"我"说:

那条河流淌于有无之间。而且, 出色的隐喻会让所有事物中隐含的 可能性的河流浮现出来。犹如优秀的诗人会在一种光景中鲜明地演示出 另一种新光景。不言而喻, 最好的隐喻即是最好的诗。您不能把眼睛从 另一种新光景上移开。(2:272)

在"出色的隐喻"世界(地下二层)里可能遇到"让人怀念的东西" (2:276),也可能不得不与某些"地痞无赖、危险的物种"(2:244)进行较 量。这些"危险的物种"正是长面人一再提醒"我"留意的"双重隐喻"。 何为"双重隐喻"?女孩解释说:"那是在您身上捕捉之于您的正确情思 (······)很早就已住在您体内深重的黑暗中"(2:273)。那么,何为"双 重隐喻"的双重性?这表现在:一方面,它隐喻了存在于现实世界中的实实

在在的"恶",小说中它显形为在现实世界里一直尾随"我"和情人的"白 色斯巴鲁男人":另一方面,它还隐喻了潜藏于"我"自身无意识中的"另 一个自我(alterego)"(川上未映子、村上春树 106),或曰本能¹。本能在 "愤怒与悲哀"<sup>2</sup>(1:249)的条件刺激下,以非理性意志的形式表现出来,转 换为想要作恶的冲动。这种冲动促使"我"在现实中用睡袍带勒住了情人的 脖子,又在睡梦中勒住了与性伙伴走进旅馆的妻子的脖子。

"我"在地下黑暗的洞穴中不断穿行,场所随之快速转换。在这期 间,作为理性象征的唐娜·安娜和妹妹的声音迭次传来,又消失不见,只剩 下"白色斯巴鲁男人"叫嚣着:"你小子在哪里干了什么?我可是一清二 楚!"(2:277)就在"漆黑漆黑的黑暗"即将把"我""准确无误地掩埋" 的紧要关头, "我"的理性意识开始发挥作用, 使"我"意识到"一切都是 关联性的产物(……)光即是影,影即是光"(2:278)。邪恶的"白色斯巴 鲁男人"实际来源于"我"自身,它以兽性因子 (animal factor) <sup>3</sup>的形式存 在,是"动物性本能的体现",一旦"失去了约束,就会完全释放出来,真 正变成邪恶的力量"(聂珍钊,《导论》46)。于是"我"摒弃杂念,将身 体捅向更为狭窄的空间, 最终从洞里钻了出来。不可否认, 隐喻意义是流变 的,但流变的方向由隐喻主体决定。

# 三、回归洞穴:村上文学世界的建构方式

在原著封皮上,小说名"刺杀骑士团长"中的"杀"字使用了斜体标记, 这提示了"杀"字之于小说的重要性。"杀"也是贯穿村上文学创作的重要 伦理线索。从《寻羊冒险记》(『羊をめぐる冒険』1982)中杀死隐喻非理 性脑文本的"羊",到《奇鸟形状录》(『ねじまき鳥クロニクル』1994) 中杀死象征绝对恶与暴力的绵谷升,再到《海边的卡夫卡》(『海辺のカフカ』 2002) 中的"杀父"与《1Q84》(『1Q84』2009-2010) 中的"杀王",村 上通过设置"杀"与"被杀"的故事情节将文本内部人物、事件、时间、场 所等要素有机串联,同时运用互文、改写、隐喻等方法将其他文本空间中的 "杀"(如俄狄浦斯弑父、战争中的屠杀、宗教性杀戮等)汇聚于当前文本中, 使之横向联系、纵向承继、相互指涉、彼此渗透, 由此搭建起神话、历史与 个人经验巧妙相融的文学世界。尤其重要的是,在《刺杀》中村上赋予"杀" 以崭新意义, 使之成为唤醒个体意识、促使个体在意识与无意识的隐喻空间 中重新审视自我的媒介。

<sup>1</sup> 本能是与生俱来的,是不受自我意识控制的条件反射活动,当无意识的本能转变为人的有 意识的活动的时候,以理性意志或非理性意志的形式表现出来。参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批 评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第247页。

<sup>2</sup> 结婚六周年纪念目前,妻子毫无征兆地提出已有外遇,要求与"我"离婚。

<sup>3</sup> 兽性因子是人的动物性本能的体现,属于人身上非人的一部分。参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理 学批评导论》, 北京: 北京大学出版社, 2014年, 第275页。

意识和隐喻是解读村上文学的两个主要概念。就"意识"而言,从最初 "青春三部曲"「中意识到内部自我存在,到《世界尽头与冷酷仙境》(『世 界の終りとハードボイルド・ワンダーランド』1985) 《舞! 舞! 舞!》 (『ダンス・ダンス・ダンス』1992) 《奇鸟形状录》《天黑以后》(『アフ ターダーク』2004)中意识到个体意识与集体意识的作用与反作用关系,再到 《1084》对封闭式集体意识的反叛;就"隐喻"而言,从《世界尽头与冷酷 仙境》中对隐喻了脑文本的"心"的关注,到《寻羊冒险记》中对隐喻主体脑 文本开放性与合理性的强调,再到《海边的卡夫卡》中对在隐喻世界中实施拟 似性伦理犯罪的讨论以及《1084》中的"小小人"、"空气蛹"等,无不显 示了村上文学内在的延续性和成长性特征。在《刺杀》中,对"意识"的关注 从被动地反叛封闭式集体意识,发展至主动杀死集体意识,以唤起个体意识觉 醒:对"隐喻"的关注从主张以开放性物语对抗封闭性物语,发展至强调隐喻 意义的流变性特征,以及意义生成过程中隐喻主体的决定性作用。与此同时, 村上还通过互文与自互文的方法,将迄今为止文学创作中的诸多要素纳入《刺 杀》的文本空间,如身份模糊的富豪 $^{2}$ (《寻羊冒险记》)、空心人(《《世 界尽头与冷酷仙境》》)、北海道之旅(《挪威的森林》)、神秘的地洞 (《奇鸟行状录》)、个性少女秋川真理惠(《奇鸟形状录》)、妻子外遇 (《斯普特尼克恋人》)、梦中的性交(《海边的卡夫卡》)、姓氏"色兔" (《没有色彩的多崎作》)、新兴宗教团体(《1Q84》)等。

村上曾将自己比作原始社会洞穴深处讲故事的高手。3"日落西山,外面 黑漆漆的,又有吓人的野兽,大家都躲在洞里围着火堆",于是故事高手出 场了。他"讲得妙趣横生,大家都被吸引进去。或者悲伤,或者兴奋,或者 一下子心头火起,或者被逗得放声大笑。饥饿啦害怕啦寒冷啦,不知不觉忘 个精光"(川上未映子村上春树 66)。写小说与在洞穴里讲故事类似,二者 都力图把尽可能向善的东西、即使外部伦理环境改变也能长期流传的"好的 故事"提供给接收者(receiver)。4

在很多情况下, 善这个东西, 理解起来咀嚼起来需要时间, 觉得麻 烦无聊的时候不算少。但是, "恶的故事", 总体上是被单纯化了的, 直接诉诸人心的表层, 剔除逻辑直截了当, 容易接受。 (川上未映子 村 上春树 67)

<sup>1</sup> 指村上最初创作的三部长篇小说,分别是《且听风吟》《1973年的弹子球》《寻羊冒险记》。

<sup>2</sup> 指《刺杀》中的人物免色涉。

<sup>3</sup> 参见 川上未映子、村上春树:《猫头鹰在黄昏起飞(村上春树访谈集)》,林少华译,上海: 上海译文出版社,2019年,第66-68页。

<sup>4</sup> 这里的洞穴区别于柏拉图的"洞穴之喻",村上曾明确表示《刺杀》与柏拉图理论并不存 在关联;与"接收者"相对的概念是"感知者"(perceiver),二词来源于村上春树小说《1Q84》。

之所以善"咀嚼起来需要时间",是因为"好的故事"的本质"在于寓意, 在于比喻",而"寓意和比喻是不应该用语言说明的"(1:335),而是要通 过发挥个体意识的能动作用在流变中进行把握的。一方面,因为隐喻意义只 能存在于关联性之中,所以解喻活动不得不"听命于事象与表达的关联性" (2: 244),即外部伦理环境:另一方面,虽然隐喻意义是流变的,但流变方 向由隐喻主体决定。在故事的尾声,"我"选择接受了妻子与其他男人生下的 孩子,希图通过此种方式在"我"的意识世界里加入爱与宽容即人性因子<sup>2</sup>的 要素,这或将成为"我"日后抵御邪恶的"白色斯巴鲁男人"即兽性因子的决 定性力量。至此,《刺杀》内部形成闭环结构3,这意味着村上文学世界建构 完成。在随后出版的采访集中,村上兴奋地发出邀请,"如果方便,请来我的 洞穴好了! 火要烧得旺旺的" (川上未映子 村上春树 238)。于是,身处文 本之外的我们被村上提供的洞穴风格的故事所吸引,选择杀死"理念"、把握 "隐喻",回归洞穴。这正是村上春树建构村上式文学世界的独特方式。

文学是特定历史阶段社会伦理的表达形式。4作为后现代作家中的一员,村 上春树以其敏锐的时代洞察力准确发现社会病灶,通过富有想象力的故事,表 达了一个富有良知和责任感的作家对于后现代社会以及人类未来命运的伦理关 怀。从1979年的《且听风吟》到2017年的《刺杀》,村上一直在创作中不断反 思、校正、丰富着之前的诸多伦理思考, 用毕生的精力和热情建构村上式文学 世界。当被问及故事在现代是否正在失效时,村上果断回答:"根本没有。" 亦如在遥远的洞穴深处讲述的故事一样,在村上看来,"故事在这样的时代反 而拥有百折不挠的力量" (川上未映子村上春树 236-237)。

#### **Works Cited**

跡上史郎:「かひがひしからぬ『諸君』:世界模型としての村上春樹『騎士団長殺し』」,『近 代文学試論』56(2018):97-111。

[Atogami, Shiroh. "Easygoing 'Gentlemen': Haruki Murakami's Killing Commendatore as a Model of the World." Kindaibungakushiron 56 (2018): 97-111.]

平野芳信:「村上春樹『騎士団長殺し』論:即身仏/ビーフジャーキー」,『近代文学試論』 56 (2018) : 85-95<sub>o</sub>

<sup>1</sup> 本文认为,解喻是运用能指脑概念与所指脑概念在特定伦理语境中对喻体的解构与重构, 不同隐喻意义的产生由受喻者所选伦理语境决定。

<sup>2</sup> 人性因子即人的伦理意识, 其表现形式为理性意志。参见 聂珍钊: 《文学伦理学批评导论》, 北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第274页。

<sup>3</sup> 闭环结构也叫反馈控制系统,是将系统输出量的测量值与所期望的给定值相比较,由此产 生一个偏差信号,利用此偏差信号进行调节控制,使输出值尽量接近于期望值。本文用"闭环 结构"描述村上所建构的文学世界,认为在村上文学世界中意识与无意识、地上与地下、真实 与虚构、过去与现在相互渗透,相互交互,相互影响,共同向善。

<sup>4</sup> 参见 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》,北京:北京大学出版社,2014年,第13页。

- [Hirano, Yoshinobu. "A Study on Haruki Murakami's Killing Commendatore: Sokushinbutsu / Beef Jerky." Kindaibungakushiron 56 (2018): 85-95.]
- 井関優花:「村上春樹作品における<色を持たない登場人物>像について:『色彩を持たな い多崎つくると、彼の巡礼の年』『騎士団長殺し』を中心に」,『富大比較文学』3(2020): 1-21<sub>o</sub>
- [Iseki, Uka. "Image of <the Colorless Character> in Haruki Murakami's Works: Centered on Colorless Tsukuru Tazaki and His Years of Pilgrimage and Killing Commendatore." Fudai Hikaku Bungaku 3 (2020): 1-21.]
- 川上未映子、村上春树:《猫头鹰在黄昏起飞(村上春树访谈集)》,林少华译。上海:上海 译文出版社,2019年。
- [Kawakami, Mieko and Haruki Murakami. Mimizuku wa tasogare nitobitatsu (Haruki Murakami A Long, Long Interview), translated by Lin Shaohua. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2019.]
- Morales, Daniel. "Killing Commendatore': Murakami' latest lacks inspired touch of earlier works." The Japan Times. 1 Apr. 2017. 10 Dec. 2022
  - <a href="https://www.japantimes.co.jp/culture/2017/04/01/books/book-reviews/killing-commendatore-">https://www.japantimes.co.jp/culture/2017/04/01/books/book-reviews/killing-commendatore-</a> murak a mis-latest-lacks-inspired-touch-earlier-works/#. W0KnAtIzY2w>.
- 村上春樹: 『少年カフカ: 村上春樹編集長』。東京: 新潮社, 2003年。
- [Murakami, Haruki. Kafka on the Shore Official Magazine Haruki Murakami. Tokyo: Shinchosha, 2003.]
- -:《刺杀骑士团长》,林少华译。上海:上海译文出版社,2018年。
- [ ... Killing Commendatore, translated by Lin Shaohua. Shanghai: Shanghai Translation Publishing House, 2018.]
- ---: 『村上春樹雑文集』。東京: 新潮社, 2011 年。
- [—. Murakami Haruki Zatsubun-shu. Tokyo: Shinchosha, 2011.]
- 聂珍钊: "文学伦理学批评: 口头文学与脑文本", 《外国文学研究》3(2013): 8-15。
- [—. "Ethical Literary Criticism: Oral Literature and Brain Text." Foreign Literature Studies 3 (2013): 8-15.]
- 一: "脑文本和脑概念的形成机制与文学伦理学批评",《外国文学研究》5(2017): 26-34。
- [-.. " The Forming Mechanism of Brain Text and Brain Concept in Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism." Foreign Literature Studies 5 (2017): 26-34.]
- —:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [—. An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- 清水良典:「自画像と「父」なるもの――村上春樹『騎士団長殺し』論」,『群像』5(2017): 37-46
- [Shimizu, Yoshinori. "Self-portrait and the So-called Father: A Study on Haruki Murakami's Killing Commendatore." Gunzo 5 (2017): 37-46.]
- 『日本国語大辞典』縮印版第一巻,東京:小学館,1986年。
- Nihon Kokugo Daijiten (Reduction Plate). vol.1. Tokyo: Shogakukan, 1986.

# 以伦理为轴心的转义:海登·怀特历史诗学评析 Tropics of Discourse around Ethics: A Criticism of Hayden White's Historical Poetics

# 张 谡 (Zhang Su)

内容摘要:海登·怀特认为历史是"实践的过去"和叙述的真实。话语转义即隐喻、换喻、提喻和讽喻,是历史文本书写和文本阐释的主要机制。怀特把实证主义的事实收集、结构主义的表征研究导向了事实选择及其标准的价值预设研究。同时,怀特把福柯横向权力网络考察导向阅读时差垂直控制的事件化意义网络研究。怀特提出的话语转义的理论轴心是伦理道德,文学和史学得以在伦理批评的层面通过语言的策略重新达成共识。怀特的历史诗学是一种强调伦理意义的历史喻说理论,对理解当下历史文本的虚构、虚假和虚无提供了一种视角。

关键词:话语转义;历史书写;伦理;后现代历史诗学

作者简介: 张谡,广州大学外国语学院特聘教授,北京大学博士,主要研究方向为英美文学,话语批评。本文为国家社科基金项目"欧美后现代历史诗学批评研究"【项目批号: 20BWW006】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Tropics of Discourse around Ethics: A Criticism of Hayden White's Historical Poetics

Abstract: Hayden White's contends that history is "a practical past" and a narrative truth. Tropics of discourse, mainly including metaphor, metonymy, synecdoche and irony, is the main mechanism of historiography and its interpretation. White pushes fact collection raised by positivism and representation proposed by constructionism to fact choosing and its value pre-setting. Meanwhile, White pushes horizontal power net study set by Foucault to eventualized semantic net vertically controlled by reading time difference. The axis of the tropics of discourse is ethics and then, literature and history reach a consensus at ethical level by employing linguistic strategies. Hayden White's historical poetics, as a kind of historical allegory concentrating on ethics, provides a perspective to understand the ongoing hot issues such as the discrepancies among fiction, forgery and nihilism in historical literature.

**Keywords:** tropics of discourse; historiography; ethics; postmodern historical poetics

Author: Zhang Su is Professor at School of Foreign language Studies, Guangzhou University (Guangzhou 510006, China). His research interests are British and American literature and discourse analysis (Email: zhangsu626@126.com).

海登•怀特是美国思想史家、文学评论家和历史哲学家,曾担任美国加 州大学思想史和历史学资深教授以及斯坦福大学比较文学教授。怀特借鉴福柯 的知识-权力的方法和逻辑,解构接近历史所依赖的历史书写,"探寻话语作 为原逻辑运行模式或预设形态的转化"(怀特,《话语的转义》7),即用历 史文本的叙事性来阐释其意义的内容、形式、生成机制和解释方法。海登•怀 特把历史看成"以叙事散文话语为形式的语言结构",把史学文本也置于虚构 范畴,把历史文本看作是对"真正发生的事件"的诗意的解释和再现(怀特, 《后现代历史叙事学》7)。西方史学界自亚里士多德以来,一直坚持史学是 "叙述时间关系"、是"求真"而诗学是"叙述因果关系"、是"虚构"。 作为一种"历史诗学"的本体,怀特解构或颠覆了这种在知识体系中泾渭分明 的习俗。怀特的历史诗学,通过区分存在的真实和叙述的真实而搁置了兰克难 题,把历史学研究对象从"真实材料"导向历史编撰方法或历史书写,提出了 基于"回溯性因果律"的、以话语转义为中心范畴的历史喻说论。怀特在史学 文本分析以概念与命名能力的考察,即以词义为论述的起点,使用文学文本分 析中的叙事、想象、修辞、话语、道德伦理或意识形态等概念,引入了"实践 的过去"、情节化、言辞结构、修辞等核心术语,而历史书写和文本阐释的话 语转义都以伦理道德为轴心。在后现代和"语言学转向"之后,文学和史学得 以在伦理批评的层面重新达成共识」,以伦理道德为轴心是怀特历史喻说理论 的核心内容。怀特的历史喻说论颠覆或者说借鉴了结(解)构主义,存在主义 和后现代主义的多重理论工具,打通了文学与历史的传统界限,在西方文学 界、史学界和哲学界都产生了巨大的影响。同时,海登•怀特有关虚构与伦理 的论述,对理解当下历史文学的虚构、虚假和虚无具有借鉴意义。

# 一、历史书写的伦理: "实践的过去"及其"事件化"

海登•怀特从拉丁语词源和词根,即一种词汇学范畴,考察了"转义" 的概念史,并以"转义"来阐释"历史"所指的变迁。怀特认为"转义"就 是一种思想的"前后运动"或"往返运动",也就是有关事物关联方式的观 念向另外一种关联方式观念运动。这种关联使事物能够用一种语言加以表 达,同时又预示了其他方式表达的可能性。<sup>2</sup>转义是作为文类(genre)话语 的灵魂,是话语正常运转的条件。正是通过转义机制,话语才实现其元语言

<sup>1</sup> 参见章朋: "伦理转向中的海登·怀特", 《东吴学术》4(2017): 83-93。

<sup>2</sup> 参见海登·怀特,《话语的转义》,董立河译,郑州:大象出版社,2011年,第3页。

功能,即述行和交流功能。福柯分析了词与物相区分的过程,怀特则研究了 事实与事件相区分的逻辑。"事件和对事件的叙述不是发生的,而是制造 的"(怀特,《后现代历史叙事学》307)。巴赫金的文本对话理论和克里 斯特娃的文本互文性理论都强调对"诗性语言作为双重语言被阅读"(秦海 鹰 19), 而不是讲行一个简单的文本置换。所以, 对历史文本的"思想的思 想"的探究就是怀特理论的核心话题。福柯认为,"言辞本质上是言辞和指 明"(吴猛 和新风 132),真正的书写在于符号所表达的抽象含义,而这个 符号表象通过诸如提喻、换喻和引申具有相似性的其他物,使语词获得新的 含义,成为其他名词。正如,莱柯夫把隐喻分为方位隐喻、本体隐喻和结构 转义的比喻,包括隐喻、换喻、提喻和反讽。福柯的词的转义过程被怀特用 来探究历史文本的转义过程:如何把历史和想象相结合的过程,也就是探究 历史学家的情节编制模式(或事件化)、意识形态含义模式和解释模式的底 层结构。怀特认为,历史学结合了科学的字面真实和文学小说的比喻真实。2 欧克肖特把历史分为"历史的过去"(the historical past)和"实践的过去" (the practical past)。德里达、巴尔特等文本后结构主义也主张意义是流动 和不稳定的过程。3与弗洛伊德"梦"的四重机制中的隐喻一样,怀特转义机 制中的"比喻"是打开历史话语意义的钥匙。"正是通过比喻,历史学家才 实际构建了话语的主题,他的解释不过是对他原创的比喻中主题属性的形式 化投射"(怀特,《后现代历史叙事学》108)。而这种投射或转义都发生在 一个意义的网络之中,正如福柯所说的指示新事物的新词发生在"譬如学空 间"或"修辞空间"(吴猛 和新风132)。

虽然隐喻是认知的基础,但福柯认为权力主导了知识的历史过程。福 柯把"说出来"、"写出来"及其过程都看作与权力操作体系相关的"事 件"。"必须将话语看作是一系列事件,尤其看作是政治事件:通过这些事 件,它运载着政权并由政权反过来控制着话语本身"(高宣扬 260)。权力 塑造和解构历史本事就是一个"事件"。基于19世纪心理学家证伪了浪漫主 义和实证主义把科学和历史作为理解世界的不同方式论断。这样,历史学家 自以为是的占据艺术和科学之间的中间位置,且对艺术和科学中立的立场和 中介者的角色也就自然瓦解,历史也丧失了以自证的思维方式保持自身的自 治的地位。这种解构历史"所指"、"能指"与"所指"关系的逻辑与利奥 塔解构"统一性"、"中心主义"思路一致。但是,历史作为"过去"这个 不可再现的客体对象的失去, 并不意味着作为语言产品的客体的历史叙述的

<sup>1</sup> 参见 王柯平: 《历史诗学与现代想象》,北京:北京师范大学出版社,2015年,第57页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 罗伯特·多兰: "海登·怀特与真实性伦理",《世界历史评论》3(2020): 89-105+262。

<sup>3</sup> 参见周小仪: 《从形式回到历史》,北京:北京大学出版社,2010年,第128页。

丧失。也就是说文本背景——部分的历史所指——的失去,并不意味着历史 书写过程中结构、逻辑、意义的情节的"所指"部分的失去。虽然,实证主 义史学家强调事实收集,把物理事实、人的心理活动和心理事实都作为历史 知识1, 并坚持历史学的科学性质。但是, 他们忽略了事实选择的标准以及 这种标准的价值预设。而20世纪初以列维•斯特劳斯为代表的结构主义史学 观讲一步把史学研究导向过去的表征研究,认为历史事实是心理事实,是所 相信的事实而不是实体的事实,是进入记忆且成为回忆和演说的编码和解码 的对象。但怀特却更进一步,他认为历史是"以叙事性散文话语为形式的一 种言辞结构",而一个时代都有一个主导的代表认知的言辞结构编排模式。 虽然,怀特也考察了词义的变迁,但与福柯不同,他更加强调历史书写和历 史阅读中的"时差"所导致的垂直性的控制言辞结构的意义网络,即伦理道 德或意识形态。怀特悬置了兰克对历史事实与历史叙说"相符"的客观性标 准。"历史处于诗歌和演说之间,因为它形式是诗学的,内容却是实实在在 的"(怀特,《元史学》114)。历史书写是诗人般创造事实和演说家般选择 事实的混合, 所以历史文本本身就是内容和形式的混合。在继承列维•斯特 劳斯的语言建构论基础上,怀特认为"(历史事实)必须经过再一次重构, 以作为语言结构的元素"。人们只有通过想象的方式使历史处于意识或话语 之中。"把历史同化到一种更高级的知识探究中去"(怀特,《话语的转 义》31)。历史话语是具有语言的形式和内容特征的意义系统和符号系统, 能够再现历史和构建历史意义在于其共同的结构性因素或者说叙事性功能。 实证主义所谓的"原始事实"也许无法证实和评判,"构成事实本身的东 西,就是历史学家试图像艺术家那样,通过选择它借以组织世界、过去、现 在和未来的隐喻加以解决的问题"(怀特,《话语的转义》51)。这样,历 史书写,与文学一样,都采用诗人、演说家、图像艺术家的工具,是形式和 内容化合成的"言辞结构",都是虚构地再现历史。可见,怀特先把福柯支 配词义的横向的权力网络垂直化,然后放大成一个"事件化"的意义网络。 最后,怀特旨在挖掘表征的形式和内容"历史化"(historicalization)共性即 话语转义的伦理道德结构。这种历史化的具有共性的伦理道德是控制历史话 语转义的深层结构,发生在历史书写的全过程。

那么,语言"建构的事实"又如何成为具备"所指"和"意指"的历史事 件呢? "思想依旧是语言模式的囚徒"(怀特,《元史学 Ⅳ》),借用丹麦 语言学家叶尔姆斯列夫的二元模式,怀特指出了位于语言层面的历史话语真实 性和虚构性,也就是构建的事实如何"事件化"。历史"故事"(一种实在) 在话语内容的形式层面展开,"事件"即情节建构则在话语的本质层面展开, 这就是"事件化"。历史文本虽然离不开想象和诗意的运作,但作为内容的形 式的历史故事与那些历时排列且没有意义、不可知或意义不确定的故事材料,

<sup>1</sup> 参见 朗格诺瓦、瑟诺博司: 《史学原论》, 余伟译, 郑州: 大象出版社, 2010年, 第131页。

与指涉物形式(或"所指")形成对立,"编年史"和"故事"都是历史记述 中的"原始要素",是本体的、"实际的真实"或者说"硬事实"。历史材料 和论证模式的选择则是认识论的,在"叙述的本质层面",也就是"将编年史 中的事件编排到一种意义等级之中"(怀特,《元史学》13),历史故事就 被"事件化"。这种"意义等级",也就是言辞的思想,就是伦理学意义上意 识形态,决定着情节的类型结构和事件的比喻意义。情节类型的似真性或逼 真性是比喻的真实。历史学家无论多么"冷静"、"中立"或"零态度",只 能在他所处的文化中习惯使用的情节结构类型中做出选择,而这种情节结构类 型,即"内容的形式",是历史书写的时代需求和历史文本这种"文化场域" 的文化传承形成的,是具有解释权威性的模式,也是同一文化传统中人们理解 事实和产生意义网络的共同基础。所以,历史话语的情节结构即情节编排模式 就具有形式上的一致性和连贯性,历史学家也受制于一个时代的文化症候的影 响。"将历史事实与赋予历史事实意义的叙事分离,表明从事实到叙事的运 动,是通过伦理选择实现的"(多兰95)。历史编撰中需要突出或者压抑、 移植或者增减材料,对"事实"进行文学性修饰以适应这种论证模式和读者理 解模式。但是, "语言也已经成为问题"。索绪尔提出能指与所指的任意性、 福柯所提出的"词"与"物"的偶尔停歇,解构主义指责现代语言充满了罗格 斯中心主义(logic centralism)和菲尼克斯中心(phallic centralism)主义,这 种统一的意义形成的、构建某种关系模式的话语模式必然是象征结构,是扩展 了的隐喻。多种隐喻 是用语言对事件进行综合阐释不可缺少的虚构性(但不 是虚假性)。在回应与伊格尔斯的分歧时,怀特说,"那些因素(指话语因 素)不是建构了实在,而是建构了意义。历史学家通过叙事化将这些意义赋予 过去的事实" (White, "An Old Question Raised Again" 406), "那些无序的 事件,经过历史学家的虚构或想象之后具有了审美、伦理或道德意义"(翟 恒兴 166)。怀特借用弗莱的四种基本的文学故事类型论和"文学循环论", 认为19世纪的历史起始于米什莱的历史"实在论"下的浪漫剧书写模式,经过 了保守派兰克提喻的喜剧式论证,到托克维尔悲剧式和布克哈特的反讽剧式 的书写, "从而产生可选择的历史想象力的结果"(王宁等 3)。像尼采"以 隐喻的形式为史学作诗学的辩护"(怀特,《元史学》412),怀特的历史书 写"论证模式"采取了"作为反讽的反讽"(怀特,《元史学》V)。与罗 兰 • 巴尔特多重能指重叠形成可延展的横向组合关系和纵向聚合关系不同,也 与皮尔斯表意三元过程即符号 (sign)、对象 (object) 和解释 (interpretant) 的意义传播过程不同,怀特多重转义的终点还是伦理道德。"选择某种有关历 史的看法而非选择另外一种,最终的根据是美学的或道德的,而非认识论的" (IV)。道德伦理,无论解构主义者如何避免,都是历史文本书写的决定性因 素。文本生成过程中的认知选择模式、故事编排模式和意义生成模式都以共

<sup>1</sup> 怀特的四种转义策略中有三种隐喻模式。

同的道德伦理作为"前解释",其实这也包括实证主义对史学科学化的偏好或 笃信。

# 二、"诗性阐释"的伦理:话语转义与文本阅读

历史书写作为一种思想运动,实际上是对记忆的反观、体悟、提纯和再积 淀。圣•奥古斯丁把记忆比喻成仓库,弗洛伊德和柏格森都倾向于认为过去的 经历永远无法从根本上被抹去。亚里士多德把记忆分为"记住" (memoria) 和"回想"(anamnesis)两种,并指出"回想"是找回或回复,努力让被忘 却或潜藏的事物在脑海中重新浮现的心理过程。1"回忆就是对往事的新生行 为, 更是对往事的内在形式化建构行为"(唐代兴12)。"相比被重构的过 去的方方面面,回忆更加受当下对意义和各种范畴需求的激发和引导"(勒高 夫 83)。历史书写是一种创造性叛逆<sup>2</sup>,会发生多重时间重塑、空间想象和意 义重构。但作为历史事实与记忆之间的意义桥,历史书写主要是受当下伦理需 求和伦理表达的控制。正如德里达、罗兰•巴特等指出的那样,语言有模糊性 和不透明性,根本无法再现事实。"历史意识"是思想的独特模式,而"历史 知识是人文科学与自然科学范围内的一块自治区域"(怀特,《元史学》6)。 怀特认为,"事实和虚构二元对立是传统史学臆想出来的伪命题或幼稚实在论" (多兰 92)。兰克(Rank)把坚持"真相"作为历史文本的评判标准注定没 有希望。"历史事件的现实性并不在于它们曾经发生过,而是在于:首先,它 是记忆; 其次在编年史顺序中有一个位置" (White, The Content of the Form 20)。福柯认为16世纪末以前,相似性在西方文化中一直起着创建知识的作用。 而相似性具有适应、效仿、类推和交感等四种形式,它们依靠相似性符号构成 共有的经验秩序结构, 支配着人们对语言和存在的理解。文本意义的生产机制, 包括"以叙事性散文话语为形式的一种言辞结构"(怀特,《元史学》7)的 史学文本,必然是一种开放的、多元的伦理道德或意识形态模式。这样,从"真 实性"的负担中解放出来的历史的"诗性"阐释或阅读应该聚焦于概念史的话 语迁移。所以,怀特的历史诗学目的是"确定经典作家的著作中出现过的不同 历史过程概念的家族特征"(7)。实际上,美国批评家乔纳森·卡纳也认为, 文本结构之外,读者的文学能力,即"一套超个人的传统文学规范"(周小仪 125) 也产生作品的意义。

怀特把历史著述中的概念化层面分为: 编年史, 故事, 情节化模式和论 证模式。历史书写必须首先将文献记载的整组事件,预构成一个可能的知识 客体,这种预构行为本身是诗性的而不是逻辑的(41)3。作为"原始要素" 的"编年史"和"故事",不同的历史文本"以根本不同的方式来解释着同

<sup>1</sup> See Richard Sorabji, Aristotle on Memory, Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 2004.

<sup>2</sup> 参见 谢天振:《译介学》,上海:上海外语教育出版社,1999年,第137页。

参见 海登·怀特:《元史学:十九世纪欧洲的历史想像》,陈新译,南京:译林出版社, 2013年,第41页。

一组材料的概念术语"(10)。怀特发现,就"解释历史的正确方法是什 么"和"历史作品的理想结构应该包含什么"(10),19世纪前的三十多年 形成了浪漫主义、唯心主义和实证主义三种截然不同的历史思想。它们在情 节化模式、论证模式和伦理道德或意识形态蕴含模式上体现出不同的历史编 撰风格和不同的解释性效果。史学家预制情节,描述"发生的事"和"事情 发生的原因"的"说明性言辞模型"都诉诸一般的因果律。怀特把历史文本 阅读看成"实践的过去"阐释,对应的因果律自然是基于现在的"比喻因果 性"或"倒溯因果性"。因果律解释模式以元史学预设为基础,与阐释者对 历史领域的本质理解有关,也"产生史学分析解释类型的不同概念"(多兰 92)。不像罗兰·巴特尔在论述符号由讯息(message)到信息(information) 的"能指"生成过程中加入了个人"风格"的因素(20)1,怀特揭示了历史 文本意义生成的共同因素。在相互冲突的历史过程和历史知识的概念之间做 出决断时,"这些概念源于伦理方面的考虑"。并且,判定认知的认识论立 场假设,"本身代表的只是另一种伦理选择"(36)。无论历史概念以"现 实性"还是"科学性"为依据,蕴含在意识形态模式中历史作品的伦理环节, 将一种审美感知(也是叙事概念化的情节结构)与一种行为(事件的科学性 或实在性解释的论证形式)结合起来,无论是描述性或分析性陈述或者是说 明性陈述,"都出自史学家假定的关系"(37),都必定是一种特定历史论 证的道德蕴含。怀特没有进一步阐释历史文本批评道德蕴含的具体所指,但 聂珍钊认为,在理论和实践上,文学的伦理道德批评至少包括两个方面:一 是已有认知阐释模式、伦理和文学关注的重新表达和语境的重置; 二是根据 当前文化、社会、历史条件和要求对该模式的替换和重新设计。2实际上,与 解构主义相似,怀疑论的威胁使康德也强调审美取向的道德内涵,因为"从 历史研究中学到的东西,没有哪一样不能从也就各式各样现世肉身的人性中 获得"(72)。

此外,就修辞模式而言,怀特认为列维·斯特劳斯,雅各布森和拉康 的"隐喻一转喻"二元组合,即代表言语行为的连续轴(动词)和间断轴 (名词)的"诗性智慧",不能够区分性地阐释单一话语传统内的不同风格 的习惯。怀特借用厄尔曼关于从司汤达到萨特的浪漫主义小说是"动词性" 风格向"名词性"风格转换的历史过程的认识,认为现代语言学家所偏爱 的两极修辞系统,只认可综合性语言和发散性语言的区别,是对16世纪彼 得•拉穆斯提出的四重修辞格即隐喻、转喻、提喻和反讽的认知和修辞意 识的断裂和反动。怀特推崇詹巴蒂斯塔•维柯在《新科学》中提出的四重

<sup>1</sup> 参见海登•怀特:《元史学:十九世纪欧洲的历史想像》,陈新译,南京:译林出版社, 2013年,第20页。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 聂珍钊、王松林: 《文学伦理学批评研究》, 北京: 北京大学出版社, 2020 年, 第 49 页。

区分法,并"以此作为人类从原始走向文明的不同意识阶段的基础"(怀 特,《元史学》43)。隐喻、换喻、提喻到讽喻,即从"同中见异""分 离相邻""整体部分"发展到"言意相异"的过程,也是作为人类认知起点 的命名能力的发展历程(同时也是人类知识或人类社会和文化的起点),也 是词语的意义经过见异、分离(但相邻)、整体到言意相异的转义的过程。 维柯看到了语言与现实、意识与社会之间的辩证关系,把语言功能分成"诗 学的"和"思想的"。维柯认为,当人的本质形式从神的时代、英雄时代发 展到凡人时代,语言也经历了宗教的、诗的和散文的三个阶段。作为讽喻的 "言意相异",是"词"与"物"相分离、词纯粹以思想为对象的喻说阶 段。怀特抛弃维科的辩证法(一种思辨的历史观),吸收了他的历史话语部 分,把它和皮亚杰实证主义色彩的儿童心理学相结合。因为,皮亚杰提出是 儿童发生两次"哥白尼式"的认知革命——分别在8个月和12岁——而发展 出"言意相异"甚至"言意相斥"的命名逻辑。"言意相异"或"言意相 斥"的一个"所言"与"所指"即反讽必须借助于另外一个"所指",无限 个"所指"的延异也必须借用伦理中的意义网络才能实现。这样, 怀特把皮 亚杰的知识发展论通过语言修辞的表征导向了伦理的范畴,提出了消解事实 与虚构、主语和宾语,比喻意与字面意的对立并相离的"不及物写作"的历 史阐释论。怀特说,无论历史有多少种解释形态,都受到语言基本喻说形态 以及这种喻说背后的道德伦理的制约。而且,表现为叙述结构选择的审美形 态,无论是浪漫史、喜剧、悲剧还是闹剧(即讽刺剧)的"情节效果", 以及表现为"解释范型"的选择——无论是表意型(ideographic)、形势 型(contextualist)、有机型(organistic)以及机械型(mechanistic)—— 都取决于更为基本的道德或意识形态的选择。此外,怀特又借用了曼海因 (Karl Mannheim)的"道德或意识形态"四形式论(见图表1),即"无 政府主义""保守主义""激进主义"和"自由主义"来阐释伦理道德的不 同形态。怀特指出,历史事件没有兰克们所说的"本来面目"可言,历史叙 述必须依靠而不是避免"情节效果"。"解释范型"与"情节效果"也不是 机械对应关系。但无论历史学家如何自称其避免道德意识形态倾向,"他在 表明历史表现形式立场的时候,就已经处于道德伦理或意识形态框架之中" (White, Tropics of Discourse 68-69) .

情节化模式	论证模式	伦理道德或意识形态蕴含模式
浪漫式的	形式论的	无政府主义的
悲剧式的	机械论的	激进主义的
喜剧式的	有机论的	保守主义的
讽刺式的	情境论的	自由主义的

图一 (海登•怀特,《话语的转义》81)

# 三、作为转义中心的伦理: 怀特的历史诗学文类特征的再辨析

虽然,"许多后结构主义者坚决要求与任何涉及伦理观念的作品划清界 限"(Davis and Womack ix), "解构把伦理思考、伦理意图和伦理选择的 内在生命只看成语言的结果而不是先于语言的存在"(Parker 8)。但是,怀 特没有排斥伦理道德,没有去解构微观的"所指",没有否定历史书写的"因 果关系、时间顺序、物质条件等因素"(Norris 89)。从库恩的范式理论来看, 怀特没有像法学和神学的解释一样,把逻辑和语法置于优先或者先验的位置, 而是置于范畴的判断或话语的公共逻辑形式,即主张打开"情节编排"后面 的道德或意识形态的"共时性"。也就是说,怀特的解构不像福柯、利奥塔 和德里达那样在"断裂"、"差异"处对"所指"、"罗格斯"或"欲望" 的彻底的、脱离伦理道德的解构。

怀特的历史诗学更加强调表征历史的言辞结构所依赖的伦理道德网络。 怀特把历史分为"历史的过去"和"实践的过去",因为历史结构中有些无 法叙述的事件即"历史的过去"超出了人类的认知,只能把先出现的事物看 作是后出现事物的不完满形式。历史书写就是使因果追溯达到"形象完满模 式",强调语言的不能或无能并不是否认历史的实在,其虚构也不是"随意 想象"而是在道德伦理网络中的寻找"共同知识"的"创造"。同样,阐释 或阅读历史文本应该凸显历史的文本性策略而不是文本的历史性信仰,要凸 显解释的政治而不是政治的解释。怀特的诗学旨在阐释历史文本的意义转换 以及这种转换的语言机制, 即本体、喻体以及它们的内容与形式结合后的新 意义和新语境的同一性这一维度。怀特的话语转义强调"硬事实"不是历史 原料而是叙事实在,即一个时代的共同认识模式和叙事模式。 怀特认为,道 德伦理或意识形态起着认识社会、保持认同的作用,和乌托邦一起与实在形 成对立。这样,怀特对历史文本的阐释终点自然就是一个时代的"伦理平衡 点",不同的生产方式和生存伦理必然有不同的意义生成网络。韦恩·布斯说, "任何旨在揭示叙事性故事的德性与个人和社会德性之间的关系的行为或任 何旨在揭示它们如何相互影响各自的'精神气质',都称得上是伦理批评" (聂珍钊 王松林 50)。怀特的转义起点是福柯式的"词与物"话语逻辑,但 总体论证模式更像把德里达和加塔利的"辖域化一解辖域化一再辖域化"的 压抑性社会符码的解构到再建构的倒置,变成了"伦理一编排模式(转义)一 伦理重置"的历史书写与意义生成的全过程虚构或"所指"和"意指"的回 溯性阅读。

与其他解构主义不同的是, 怀特强调历史学家介入历史书写的审美方 式、认识论方式和伦理方式。所以,怀特被很容易被指责是"选择过去"或 "历史相对主义",尤其容易误解他对大屠杀等极限事件的文学再现的理 解。显然,怀特是历史证据的相对主义者、方法论上或政治上存在主义者和

强调共同意识的结构主义者。虽然,怀特的历史诗学被贴上"语言相对主 义"、"语言比喻决定论"、"历史客体虚无论"和"认识危机论"等标 签,尤其是他对"大屠杀"的阐释和补充阐释都遭到了历史学家尤其是犹太 身份的历史学家集体的和长时间的反对和抵制。如,热内,贝尔反对怀特的 历史修辞分析法。利科作为大屠杀的幸存者一再强调"历史学家的任务是记 述集体记忆"(利科 345),尤其是集体文化中"永存"(never forget)部分 从而指责怀特的历史喻说容易导致修正主义。

阿拉尔多•莫米连诺坚持阐释与事实兰克式"符合论",反对怀特凸显 事件组合和表现方式而淡化历史真实性的批评视角。旅美学者邵立新更是撰文 认为怀特的历史是破坏和虚无的"魔术"(邵立新 4)。作为回应,怀特认为 "反对后现代主义的作者们都错了" (White, "Introduction" 152)。 怀特虽然 不认为语言能够表述"实在",但与伊格尔顿和詹姆逊一样,都强调让文本回 到历史中去,不能像后现代主义那样反对历史叙事。而且,怀特的历史喻说理 论把伦理道德或意识形态作为阐释的核心轴, 其建构性要大于解构性。但是, 目不说伦理和道德各有侧重, 他多次把把意识形态等同于道德伦理, 其理论有 语义含混和"所指"漂浮的嫌疑。"历史思想中的'阐释'就是各种转义在认 知、审美和道德(或意识形态)等概念化层面上的投射"(怀特,《话语的转 义》85)。由于解构主义者一般都反对政治性意识形态,所以,读者只能合理 地推论怀特主要是指道德伦理意义上的"无政府主义"、"激进主义"、"保 守主义"和"自由主义"。此外,他还混淆了记忆伦理和历史伦理。记忆伦理 在于与破坏道德的"绝对的恶"作斗争以及"对过去的重新认识和对集体记忆 的管理"(玛格利特 73)。历史的伦理是指历史学家应该遵守的学科规则, 包含与歪曲事实的行为斗争的选择。实际上,他的"历史材料"选择、话语转 义、情节编排和伦理道德等术语渗透的伦理主要是裹在历史伦理外衣下的记忆 伦理。对他历史相对主义的指责,尤其是对"大屠杀"多样化呈现的批评1, 主要是指他可能纵容的、而不是明确主张的对历史伦理的违反。

那么,怀特的历史诗学可否归属于其同时代的新历史主义呢?美国的新 历史主义批评流派出现在20世纪80年代初,由格林布拉格在《文类》杂志上 第一次确定这个称谓。王一川认为新历史主义"偏爱考证轶事轶文",是20 世纪语言论诗学的一部分。2新历史主义借用解构主义的理论武器,打开旧 历史主义在文本中构建的宏大叙事和统一的连续的"大历史",强调非官方 的野史、稗史、秽史、插曲、偶然等因素,通过凸显历史的异质、断裂、裂 缝,完成对权力的批判。"新历史主义"是对17至19世纪以理性为中心的认

<sup>1</sup> 怀特本人多次声明反对喜剧化呈现"大屠杀"。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 王一川: "后结构历史主义诗学——新历史主义和文化唯物主义述评", 《外国文学 评论》3(1993):5-16。

识论诗学的反拨,历史的文本性和文本的历史性,即对"历史"与"文本" 的特殊规定性是它的理论起点和重要命题。"'社会能量'(socia energy) 是新历史主义建立文学与社会历史之间新型关联并说明其文学存在方式的轴 心概念"(张进 89)。可见,新历史主义的理论渊源和怀特的历史诗学一 样,都是福柯的话语理论。但是,新历史主义主要是对"大历史"意义的解 构,即颠覆、解构和补充"宏大叙事"和"同一性"理性,而怀特的历史诗 学则是建构性的阐释历史叙事环节的语言修辞术、意义生成和文本阐释逻 辑。新历史主义用"小历史"来颠覆大历史,往往陷于没有"实在"支撑的 意义置换。新历史主义的解构实际上就是一种与"大历史"二元对立式的虚 假。而怀特的历史诗学更多的是一种独立的,以伦理作为阐释中心的后现代 历史诗学。有没有共同的伦理道德模式作为意义的支撑,或者说文本符号所 指具不具备共同的伦理性,是历史虚构和虚无的分水岭,也是怀特的历史诗 学与包括新历史主义在内的其他后现代诗学的分水岭。

#### Works Cited

阿维夏伊•玛格利特: 《记忆的伦理》, 贺海仁译。北京: 清华大学出版社, 2015年。

[Avishai Margalit. The Ethics of Memory, translated by He Hairen. Beijing: Tsinghua UP, 2015.]

Brooks, Cleanth. The Well Wrought Urn: Studies in the Structure of Poetry. Boston: Houghton Mifflin Harcourt, 1956.

Davis, Todd and Kenneth Womack. "Preface." Mapping the Ethical Turn: A Reader in Ethics, Culture and Literary Theory, edited by Todd Davis and Kenneth Womack. Charlottesville: UP of Virginia, 2001.

罗伯特•多兰: "海登•怀特与真实性伦理", 《世界历史评论》3(2020): 89-105+262。

[Duran, Robert. "Hayden White and the Ethics of Authenticity." The World History Review 3 (2020): 89-105+262.]

高宣扬: 《当代法国思想五十年》。北京: 中国人民大学出版社,2005年。

[Gao Xuanyang. Fifty Years of Contemporary Thoughts in France. Beijing: China Renmin UP, 2005.]

沃尔特·约斯特、迈克尔·J·海德:《当代修辞学与解释学读本》,黄旺译。北京:商务印书馆, 2018年。

[Jost, Walter and Michael J. Hyde. Contemporary Rhetoric and Hermeneutics In Our Time: A Reader, translated by Huang Wang. Beijing: The Commercial Press, 2018.]

朗格诺瓦、瑟诺博司:《史学原论》,余伟译。郑州:大象出版社,2010年。

[Langenova and Xenobius. Introduction aux Atudes Historique, translated by Yu Wei. Zhengzhou: Elephant Press, 2010.]

勒高夫: 《历史与记忆》, 方仁杰、倪复生译。南京: 译林出版社, 2021年。

See L.A. Montrose, Professing the renaissance: The politics and politics of culture, London: Routledge, 1989, 19-20.

- [Le Goff, Jacques. History and Memory, translated by Fang Renjie and Ni Fusheng. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2021.]
- Montrose, L.A.. Professing the renaissance: The politics and politics of culture, London: Routledge, 1989. 19-20.
- 聂珍钊、王松林:《文学伦理学批评研究》。北京:北京大学出版社,2020年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao and Wang Songlin, eds. A Study on the Theory of Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2020.]
- Norris, Christopher. "Post Modernizing History." The Postmodern History Reader, edited by Keith Jenkins. London: Routledge, 1997.
- Parker, David. Renegotiating Ethics in Literature, Philosophy, and Theory: Introduction: the Turn to Ethics in the 1990s. Cambridge: Cambridge UP, 1998.
- 秦海鹰: "互文性理论的缘起与流变",《外国文学评论》3(2004):19-30。
- [Qin Haiying. "The Beginnings and Developments of Intertextuality Theory." Foreign Literature Review 3 (2004): 19-30.]
- 保罗·利科:《记忆、历史、遗忘》,李彦芩、陈颖译。上海:华东师范大学出版社,2018年。
- [Ricoeur, Paul. Memory, History, Forgetting, translated by Li Yanqin and Chen Ying. Shanghai: East China Normal UP, 2018.]
- 邵立新: "理论还是魔术——评海登•怀特的《玄史学》", 《史学理论研究》4(1994):
- [Shao Lixin. "Theory or Magic—Comments on Meta-history by Hayden White." Historiography Ouarterly 4 (1994): 110-123+161.]
- Sorabji, Richard. Aristotle on Memory. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 2004.
- 唐代兴: "文学话语形态:文艺学研究的新视域",《西南民族学院学报》12(2001):43-52+239。
- [Tang Daixing. "Literary Discourse: A New Field for the Theory of Literature and Arts." Journal of Southwest Minzu University 12 (2001): 43-52+239.]
- 王柯平: 《历史诗学与现代想象》。北京: 北京师范大学出版社,2015年。
- [Wang Keping. Historical Poetics and Modern Imagination. Beijing: Beijing Normal University Publishing House, 2015.]
- 王宁等: 《弗莱研究: 中国与西方》。北京: 中国社会科学出版社,1996年。
- [Wang Ning, etc. Studies of Frye: China and the West. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 1996.]
- 王一川: "后结构历史主义诗学——新历史主义和文化唯物主义述评", 《外国文学评论》3 (1993): 5-16.
- [Wang Yichuan. "Post-Structuralist Historical Poetics Review of New Historicism and Cultural Mateiralism." Foreign Literature Review 3 (1993): 5-16.]
- White, Hayden. The Content of the Form: Narrative and Historical Representation. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins UP, 1987.

- —. Tropics of Discourse: Essays in Cultural Criticism. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins UP, 1978.
- —. "Introduction: Historical, Fiction, Fictional History, and Historical Reality." Rethinking History 9: 2-3 (2005): 147-157.
- —. "An Old Question Raised Again: Is historiography Art or Science? (Response to Iggers)." Rethinking History 3 (2000): 391-406.
- 海登•怀特:《元史学:十九世纪欧洲的历史想像》,陈新译。南京:译林出版社,2013年。
- [White, Hayden. Meta-history: The Historical Imagination, translated by Chen Xin. Nanjing: Yilin Press, 2013.]
- 一:《后现代历史叙事学》,陈永国译。北京:中国社会科学出版社,2003年。
- [—. Postmodernist Historical Narratology, translated by Chen Yongguo. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 2003.]
- 一:《话语的转义》,董立河译。郑州:大象出版社,2011年。
- [-: Tropics of Discourse: Essays in Cultural Criticism, translated by Dong Lihe. Zhengzhou: Elephant Press, 2011.]
- 吴猛、和新风: 《文化权力的终结:与福柯对话》。成都:四川人民出版社,2003年。
- [Wu Meng and He Xinfeng. The Ending of Cultural Power: A Dialogue with Foucult. Chengdu: Sichuan People's Press, 2003.]

谢天振:《译介学》。上海:上海外语教育出版社,1999年。

[Xie Tianzhen. Medio Translatology. Shanghai: Shanghai Foreign Language Education Press, 1999.]

杨国静: 《伦理》。北京: 外语教学与研究出版社, 2020年。

[Yang Guojing. Ethics. Beijing: Foreign Language Teaching and Research Press, 2020.]

翟恒兴: 《走向历史诗学》。杭州: 浙江大学出版社,2014年。

[Zhai Hengxing. Towards Historical Poetics. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2014.]

张进: 《历史诗学通论》。暨南: 暨南大学出版社,2013年。

[Zhang Jin. A General Introduction to Historical Poetics. Jinan: Jinan UP, 2013.]

章朋: "伦理转向中的海登•怀特", 《东吴学术》4(2017): 83-93。

[Zhang Peng. "Hayden White in the Ethical Turn." Soochow Academic 4 (2017): 83-93.]

周小仪: 《从形式回到历史》。北京: 北京大学出版社, 2010年。

[Zhou Xiaoyi. Back to History from Form. Beijing: Beijing UP, 2010.]

# 《旧约》中的经济伦理

# **Economic Ethics in the Old Testament**

# 杨 建 (Yang Jian)

内容摘要:《旧约》中的经济伦理指的是古代以色列人经济活动中的伦理关系、道德原则和道德规范。受上帝神学支配,以摩西律法为依据,以色列人的财产包括土地、房屋、儿女、仆俾、牛驴等所有一切,上帝是财产真正的所有者和赐予者,子民是使用者、受惠者,上帝通过拣选、圣约、应许、赐予,使子民富足,财产增与减、得与失是上帝与子民关系的晴雨表和温度计。在上帝与子民、祭司与民众、国王与臣民、家长与子女、主人与奴婢、富人与穷人以色列人与外族等伦理关系中,上帝制定了财产归属伦理、买卖赎回伦理关系中,上帝制定了财产组属伦理、买卖赎回伦理关系中,上帝制定了财产的属伦理、买卖赎回伦理关系中,上帝制定了财产的工厂、民族利益、群体共享等道德原则,希望子民遵循尊卑有序、内外有别、诚信仁义等道德规范,其契约精神、平等观念、仁爱主张对后世有深远影响,从中我们可以看到伦理身份对于伦理责任和伦理选择的决定性作用。

关键词:《旧约》;摩西律法;经济伦理

作者简介: 杨建, 华中师范大学文学院教授, 国际文学伦理学批评研究中心研究员, 湖北文学理论与批评研究中心研究员, 主要研究领域为 20 世纪西方文学、东方文学、东方美学。

Title: Economic Ethics in the Old Testament

Abstract: The economic ethics in the *Old Testament* refers to the ethical relationship, moral principles and moral norm of the economic activities among the ancient Israelites. Guided by theology of God and in accordance with the Mosaic Law, the property of the Israelis include all stuff such as their land, houses, children, servants and cattle; God is the true owner and giver, his people are the users and beneficiaries; Through selection, Testament, promise and bestowal, making his people wealthy, causing their property to increase or decrease and enabling them to gain or lose are the actions reflecting the relationship between God and his people, just like a barometer or a thermometer. Among the relationship between God and his people, the priests and the people, the King and his subjects, parents and children, master and his servants, the rich and the poor, Israelites and gentiles, God has formulated ethics pertaining to property ownership, transaction and redemption, labor and employment, compensation and atonement, so as to establish the moral principles

obeying fairness and equity, national interest and group sharing, in hope of his people following the moral norms concerning the order of superiority and inferiority, the differences between the insiders and the outsiders as well as honesty and kindness. The spirit of contract, equity and charity have exerted far-reaching influence on the later generations. We can see that ethical identity plays a decisive role in ethical responsibility and ethical choice.

Keywords: Old Testament; The Mosaic Law; economic ethics

Author: Yang Jian is Professor at the School of Chinese Language and Literature, Central China Normal University (Wuhan 430079, China), research fellow at International Ethical Literary Criticism Research Center, and research fellow at Hubei Literary Theory and Criticism Research Center. Her research areas are the 20<sup>th</sup>-century Western literature, Eastern literature and Eastern aesthetics (Email: yangjian64@163.com).

《旧约》中的经济伦理指的是古代以色列人在经济活动中的伦理关系、 道德原则和道德规范。受上帝神学支配,以摩西律法一为依据,以色列人的财 产包括土地、房屋、儿女、仆俾、牛驴等所有一切,上帝是财产真正的所有 者和赐予者, 子民是使用者、受惠者, 上帝通过拣选、圣约、应许、赐予使 子民富足,财产的增与减、得与失是上帝与子民关系的晴雨表和温度计。在 上帝与子民、祭司与民众、国王与臣民、家长与子女、主人与奴婢、富人与 穷人、以色列人与外族等伦理关系中,上帝制定了财产归属伦理、买卖赎回 伦理、劳务雇佣伦理、债权债务伦理、赔偿赎罪伦理等,这是一个跨学科(宗 教学、经济学、伦理学、法学、社会学、文学)研究课题。

# 一、财产归属伦理

### (一) 土地归属伦理

有学者认为,"根据《圣经》里的文献分析,希伯来人的社会是一个从 游牧向农业过渡的社会,土地的价值与意义还尚未被希伯来人所真正认识, 因而有关土地所有权的规定极其有限"(叶秋华38)。但事实上,作为"流 浪的民族",希伯来人即以色列人<sup>2</sup>对土地有强烈的体认,古代以色列农业文 明以农耕和畜牧业为主,皆与土地结缘,犹太教土地神学奠定了上帝与以色 列人牢不可破的契约关系以及子民对"应许之地"的使用权和合法性。

在《圣经》中,上帝说:"地是我的;你们在我面前是客旅、是寄居 1 摩西律法是上帝启示摩西、由摩西颁布给古代以色列人的律法,主要包含在《摩西五经》(《创 世记》《出埃及记》《利未记》《民数记》《申命记》)中,分为"圣约法典""圣洁法典""申 命法典"三大部分,构建了古代以色列人的律法体系和律法原则,兼有道德规范和宗教戒律特点。 2 希伯来人,后世又被称为以色列人、犹大人、犹太人,有多种称谓。

的"(利25:23)1。土地归上帝所有,世人皆是客旅、寄居者,由上帝指派居 住和耕种。上帝拣选以色列人,指示"应许之地",以立约方式赐予土地, 土地作为产业,是"上帝与以色列之间立约的房角石"(Orlinsky 27)。

《旧约》土地神学告诉我们,上帝向以色列人所指示的迦南这块土地 具有神学意义,存在着"上帝赐予"(divine gift)和"上帝掌有"(divine ownership)两个互补主题<sup>2</sup>,这是上帝对选民的恩典,也是对选民的约束。上 帝引领子民占领土地之后,将他的产业赐予社会各阶层。《民数记》第26、34 章和《约书亚记》第13-19章详细记载了土地分配细节,以色列各支派、各宗 族、各父家都享有这份产业,按人数和实际需要得到足够的土地,拈阄分地。 正如先知所希望的那样, "人人都要坐在自己葡萄树下和无花果树下"(弥 4:4)。寄居的外人也能分享寄居之地的地业(结 47:22-23)。上帝制定了明确 的土地分配原则:公平公正,群体共享。这种土地分配制度显然与迦南人大有 不同, "在迦南人的体系中, 所有土地都属各城的君王或领主所拥有, 其他所 有百姓都是佃农,土地不属于他们且要赋税"(莱特 166)。

选民是以色列人所认同的民族身份,不同于其他民族,以色列人是上帝 优选的民族,上帝通过应许和立约赐予选民以色列人土地,这是对以色列人的 特殊恩典,以色列人拥有土地使用权,条件是对上帝绝对虔诚和行为守范。由 此可见, "伦理身份是道德行为及道德规范的前提,并对道德行为主体产生约 束,有时甚至是强制性约束"(聂珍钊 264)。我们也看到,"在现实中,伦 理要求身份与道德行为相符合,即身份与行为在道德规范上相一致。伦理身份 与道德规范相悖,于是导致伦理冲突"(聂珍钊 264),也导致一系列悲剧的 发生。"在《利未记》第26章和《申命记》第28章中,可以很快发现一种经济 因果关系系统"(North 272),顺从的人蒙福,悖逆的人受惩、受诅咒,如 果以色列人忤逆上帝,上帝随时可以收回土地使用权。"赏赐的是耶和华,收 取的也是耶和华"(伯1:21)。"蒙耶和华赐福的,必承受地土;/被他咒诅 的,必被剪除"(诗 37:22; 37:34; 69:36)。以色列民族历史上历次背井离乡、 走家串户都与背离上帝、失去土地有关。先知强烈控诉强征土地、贪图房屋等 经济不公、压迫剥削现象(如弥 2:1-2; 赛 5:8), 古代以色列国家叙事表明, 强占土地会像亚哈王那样遭到报应(王上 21:21-22; 22:34-38)。"土地被拟人 化地刻画为上帝赐福或诅咒的媒介"(莱特77),整部《旧约》中的历史就 是上帝藉迦南这块土地对选民应许、赐予、收回、惩罚、救赎的历史,也是选 民在这块土地上被赐福、诅咒、吐出、驱逐、回归的历史,外族对迦南地的占 有或侵略都是不合法的。

<sup>1</sup> 本文对《圣经》的引用均出自《圣经》(中英对照)中文和合本新国际版(南京:中国基督 教三自爱国运动委员会、中国基督教协会出版,2007年),下文只在引文后注明卷名和章节, 不再一一说明。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 莱特(Christopher J. H. Wright): 《旧约伦理学》, 黄龙光译。北京: 中央编译出版社, 2014年, 第74页。

# (二) 个人财产归属伦理

除了土地,以色列人的房屋、儿女、仆俾、牛驴等财产也蒙上帝所赐。例 如上帝应许、应验撒拉得子(创 17:16, 19; 21:2)、拉结得子(创 30:22-24); "耶和华后来赐福给约伯比先前更多。他有一万四千羊,六千骆驼,一千对 牛,一千母驴。他也有七个儿子,三个女儿"(伯 42:12-13)。"摩西十诫" 严格规定: "不可贪恋人的房屋; 也不可贪恋人的妻子、仆俾、牛驴, 并他一 切所有的"(出 20:17)。个人私有财产神圣不可侵犯,不可贪恋、觊觎、偷 盗别人的财产。摩西律法还详细制定了个人财产保护法,如被盗、田园受损、 失火、牲畜死伤等情况下的赔偿条例(出22:1-15),帮弟兄找寻、保管迷失 的牛羊和丢失的衣物的条例(申 22:1-3), 在邻舍的葡萄园里可以随意吃饱但 不可装在器皿中、进了邻舍站着的禾稼可以用手摘穗子但不可用镰刀割取禾稼 的条例(申23:24-25), 甚至要怜恤仇人的财产(出23:4-5)。

个人财产并非绝对私有,作为回报,也是上帝拥有所有权明证,子民要 向上帝缴纳初熟的田产、十一奉献。"地里首先初熟之物要送到耶和华你神 的殿"(出 23:19)。以色列人地上所有的十分之一都当归给上帝为圣(利 27:30-33) 。

《旧约》记载了以色列历史上各种形式的贪婪所带来的罪恶,再加上 政权更替、自然灾害、战争等因素,导致众多百姓未能拥有自己的土地。这 些人若要生存,必须将自己变卖,服务拥有土地的富户。希伯来人奴仆(出 21:2-6; 申 15:12-18) 就属于这种没有土地的阶级。摩西律法特别关注对这些 人的保障,同时也关注其他没有土地的族群,例如寡妇、孤儿、寄居者、利 未人、祭司。君王拥有极高社会身份,为了符合神意,也为了防止君王损害 国家和臣民利益、以权谋私,摩西律法严格规定: "你总要立耶和华你神拣 选的人为王,必从你弟兄中立一人,不可立你弟兄以外的人为王。只是王不 可为自己加添马匹,也不可使百姓回埃及去,为要加添他的马匹(……)也 不可为自己多积金银"(申17:15-16、17)。

"人的身份是一个人在社会中存在的标识,人需要承担身份所赋予的责任 和义务"(聂珍钊 263)。利未人是古代以色列人中的祭司阶层,分别为圣代 替所有以色列人头生的长子献给上帝(出 13:2、12-15; 民 3:41)。利未人是神 职人员,担负着看守会幕、办理帐幕事务、向上帝献祭等神圣职责,日用饮食 由以色列其他支派提供。只有亚伦及其家族男性后代才能做祭司,利未部族其 他成员担任祭司助手。作为上帝权利延伸,摩西律法有对祭司和利未人在祭祀 中当得之分的规定(利 2:3、10; 6:15、16、18; 7:10、28-36; 民 18:8-32; 申 18:1-5、11,17)。"将你们的燔祭、平安祭,十分取一之物,和手中的举祭,并还 愿祭、甘心祭,以及牛群羊群中头生的,都奉到那里。在那里,耶和华你们神 的面前, 你们和你们的家属都可以吃"(申12:6-7)。祭司除享有圣果, 还享 有民众献给神的火祭和一切捐献物,但他们不可有产业(民 18:20, 24),因为

神就是其产业(民 18:20)。律法以神的名义赐给祭司各种奖赏,包括地上所 有为人所用的动物的头生子、祭品的一部分以及所献燔祭牲口的皮、祭司家人 和家奴拥有吃圣物的特权(利22:10-13)。

上帝晓谕摩西让以色列人给自己送甘心乐意的礼(出25:3-7),以色列 人要为会幕圣所、约柜、灯台、祭坛、香坛、祭司、院子等奉献一切器具用 品,二十岁以上的以色列人每人要交赎罪银半舍客勒,不多不少,作为礼物 献给上帝(出30:12、14-16)。"在耶和华面前,你们怎样,寄居的也要怎 样。你们并与你们同居的外人,当有一样的条例,一样的典章"(民 15:15-16)。这些奉献既维护了圣殿经济,也确立了族群捐税制度和人人应当履行 的责任和义务。

### (三) 施舍伦理

犹太人乐于奉献爱心、扶弱济贫的慈善传统见于《圣经》。摩西律法规 定: "不可亏负寄居的,也不可欺压他,因为你们在埃及地也作过寄居的" (出 22:21; 23:9)。 "不可苦待寡妇和孤儿"(出 22:22)。 "每逢三年的末 一年,你要将本年的土产十分之一都取出来,积存在你的城中。在你城里无 分无业的利未人,和你城里寄居的,并孤儿寡妇,都可以来,吃得饱足。这 样,耶和华你的神必在你手里所办的一切事上,赐福与你"(申 14:28-29)。 "在你们的地收割庄稼,不可割尽田角,也不可拾取所遗落的,要留给穷人和 寄居的"(利 23:22)。"你在田间收割庄稼,若忘下一捆,不可回去再取, 要留给寄居的与孤儿寡妇。这样,耶和华你神必在你手里所办的一切事上赐福 与你。你打橄榄树, 枝上剩下的, 不可再打, 要留给寄居的与孤儿寡妇。你摘 葡萄园的葡萄,所剩下的,不可再摘,要留给寄居的与孤儿寡妇"(申 24:19-21)。《路得记》讲述波阿斯对寡妇路得的善举,让她吃饱饭,并吩咐仆人 说:"她就是在捆中拾取麦穗,也可以容她,不可羞辱她。并要从捆里抽出些 来,留在地下任她拾取,不可叱吓她"(2:14-16)。

给需要帮助的穷人或孤儿寡妇施舍财物,是上帝的规定,也是上帝推崇 的美德。"义人却恩待人,并且施舍。/〔……〕/我从前年幼,现在年老,/ 却未见过义人被弃,/也未见过他的后裔讨饭"(诗 37:21、25)。财产本属 于上帝,施舍的恩德也该归与上帝。"怜悯贫穷的,就是借给耶和华,/他的 善行, 耶和华必偿还"(箴 19:17)。"神在他的圣所作孤儿的父, 作寡妇 的伸冤者"(诗 68:5)。《新约》也谈施舍与善行(太 6:2、4; 路 11:41; 罗 12:8; 林后 9:8-9、11; 提前 6:18), 谴责为富不仁者(太 19:24; 雅 5:1-4; 启 3:17-18) 和闲懒之人(帖后 3:6-13),但对于施舍没有具体规定,只有道德 说教。

## (四)财产继承伦理

古代以色列是一夫多妻制,继嗣是家庭中最大的问题。摩西律法确立了 长子继承制,长子继承的财产份额比其他子女"多加一分"(申 21:17),并 且还可以继任家长的位置,因为"这儿子是他力量强壮的时候生的,长子的 名分本当归他"(申 21:17)。如果长子惹怒了父亲,可能会被父亲取消长子 名分,不过律法对父亲的伦理选择有严格限制,不允许父亲由于偏爱次子而 随意剥夺长子名分、另选继承人、长子一般都能够获得大部分的财产、以保 证原先雄厚的家产不被四分五裂。长子继承制解决了权位和财产继承分配问 题, 所奉行的伦理原则为长幼有序、长子优先, 长子拥有与生俱来的优越家 庭身份,也就享有与身份相符的特殊权利,即继承权,同时肩负着家业兴旺、 养老送终责任。长子继承制实际上是由伦理身份决定的,避免了兄弟之间因 权位和财产继承所引发的祸乱,有利于建立稳定的家庭和社会秩序。

长子指的是嫡长子, 摩西律法禁止立庶为嫡。例如以实玛利是使女埃及 人夏甲所生, 非嫡出, 虽年长于以撒, 但不符合长子继承制规定, 而以撒是正 妻撒拉所生, 所以以撒不是长子但拥有继承权。撒拉对亚伯拉罕说: "你把这 使女和她儿子赶出去!因为这使女的儿子不可与我的儿子以撒一同承受产业" (创 21:10)。亚伯拉罕因他儿子的缘故很忧愁,举棋不定。这时神对亚伯拉 罕说: "你不必为这童子和你的使女忧愁,凡撒拉对你说的话,你都该听从, 因为从以撒生的,才要称为你的后裔"(创 21:12)。上帝在此明确规定了嫡 长子继承制。亚伯拉罕寿终时"将一切所有的都给了以撒。亚伯拉罕把财物分 给他庶出的众子,趁着自己还在世的时候,打发他们离开他的儿子以撒,往东 方去"(创 25:5-6)。这里"一切所有的"主要指土地和房子。土地是唯有长 子才能继承的产业,在此效仿上帝与以色列之间的子嗣关系,上帝宣称"以色 列是我的长子"(出 4:22),并赐予长子"应许之地"作为产业。又如以扫和 雅各是孪生兄弟,即"双子"(创 25:24),以扫为兄,雅各为弟。"哥哥以 扫已获得继嗣名分,按正当法则,理应得到父亲福分并接受父辈遗产"(弗雷 泽 189)。这说明族长时期已经有了长子继嗣制,福分(包括甘露、土地、五 谷、新酒、主权等)理应由长子继承,这是"正当法则"。雅各的欺骗行为不 仅违法, 而且有违长幼尊卑伦理和公平公正原则。

摩西律法明文规定,一个家庭中如果长子早逝而他又无后代,则由次子 继承长子特权。如果没有儿子,则由女儿继承家产。若女儿还未出嫁,则应 获得与男子等同的继承权,之后她应当嫁给本部族的男子,以防财产流失。 对于无子嗣者,财产依次由其弟兄或父亲的弟兄、最近的亲属继承(民27:8-11)。这一财产继承法依据的是血缘亲疏关系伦理。虽然以色列民族有男尊 女卑思想,女子地位不高,在生产劳动中作用有限,但她们在没有兄弟的情 况下仍然拥有财产继承权, 西罗非哈的女儿继承父亲产业的案例就很典型(民 27:5-7)。然而作为妻子和母亲的女性却很难继承丈夫和儿子的财产。

古代以色列人实行寡妇内嫁制(申25:5-10),寡妇内嫁制目的不仅是为 了使死兄的名字不在以色列中涂抹了,还有一个重要目的就是寡妇与她丈夫 的兄弟所生的孩子可以继承死人的遗产,这是对长子继承权的维护。《创世记》 第38章犹大与他玛的故事是寡妇内嫁制的一个特例。

# 二、买卖赎回伦理

# (一) 土地买卖赎回伦理

亚哈王想购买拿伯的葡萄园,或拿另一块地与之交换,拿伯的回应很 强烈: "我敬畏耶和华,万不敢将我先人留下的产业给你"(王上 21:3)。 拿伯的宣告是正确的,因为上帝赐予的土地不允许人自由买卖。"地不可永 卖,因为地是我的;你们在我面前是客旅、是寄居的"(利 25:23)。以色列 人可能被迫买卖土地,但土地卖出后可以赎回,即"赎买"。"在你们所得 为业的全地,也要准人将地赎回"(利 25:24)。弟兄伦理身份不同于一般的 买主和卖主,有血缘亲情,所以帮助穷乏的弟兄赎回所卖之地是天经地义之 事。"你的弟兄(注:'弟兄'指本国人说。下同),若渐渐贫乏,卖了几 分地业, 他至近的亲属就要来把弟兄所卖的赎回。若没有能给他赎回的, 他 自己渐渐富足,能够赎回,就要算出卖地的年数,把余剩年数的价值还那买 主,自己便归回自己的地业。倘若不能为自己得回所卖的,仍要存在买主的 手里,直到禧年"(利 25:25-28)。到了禧年,"各人要归自己的产业,各 归本家。〔……〕地业要出买主的手,自己便归回自己的地业"(利 25:10, 28)。可见家族土地作为安身立命之本是不允许他人剥夺的。

《旧约》提供了一些土地赎买例子。例如波阿斯从本城长老中拣选十人 做见证人,从族嫂拿俄米手中置买族兄以利米勒及两个儿子基连、玛伦的赎地, "又娶了玛伦的妻摩押女子路得为妻,好在死人的产业上存留他的名,免得 他的名在本族本乡灭没"(得4:10)。又如耶利米从哈拿蔑手里购买亚拿突 赎地花了十七舍客勒银子, "又请见证人来" (耶 32:10)。这一切都"合乎 承受之理"(耶32:8),是遵从上帝的意旨来做的(耶32:25)。

#### (二) 房屋买卖赎回伦理

在城里房屋买卖和乡下房屋买卖问题上,一般人与利未人条例有些不同, 因为利未人是神职人员,在以色列人中身份特殊,所以享有特权。

人若卖城内的住宅,卖了以后,一年之内可以赎回。在一整年,必 有赎回的权柄。若在一整年之内不赎回,这城内的房屋,就定准永归买 主,世世代代为业。在禧年也不得出买主的手。但房屋在无城墙的村庄 里,要看如乡下的田地一样,可以赎回。到了禧年,都要出买主的手。

然而利未人所得为业的城邑,其中的房屋,利未人可以随时赎回。 若是一个利未人不将所卖的房屋赎回,是在所得为业的城内,到了禧 年,就要出买主的手,因为利未人城邑的房屋,是他们在以色列人中的 产业。只是他们各城郊野之地不可卖, 因为是他们永远的产业。(利 25:29-34)

利未人在房屋买卖上享有特权,别人在城里的房屋一年里不赎回,便再 无机会赎回, 禧年也不得出买主的手, 而利未人可以随时赎回, 即使不赎回, 禧年也可以无偿索回。

# (三) 奴仆买卖赎回伦理

主仆、亲子、族别伦理身份决定了伦理责任与伦理选择。因为希伯来仆 人虽为奴,与主人身份有别,但仍拥有选民身份,也就拥有享受安息年得自 由的权利,这是上帝特许的。主人要作出正确的伦理选择,"你若买希伯来 人作奴仆,他必服侍你六年,第七年他可以自由,白白地出去"(出 21:2;参 见申 15:12)。"你任他自由的时候,不可使他空手而去。要从你羊群、禾场、 酒醡之中,多多给他,耶和华你的神怎样赐福与你,你也要照样给他。要记 念你在埃及地作过奴仆, 耶和华你的神将你救赎。〔……〕因他服侍你六年, 较比雇工的工价多加一倍了"(申15:13-15、18)。主仆身份决定了仆人对 主人的从属关系,主仆界限分明,个人私有财产不容侵犯,也不容损失。主 人给仆人的妻和妻所生的儿女都是主人的私有财产,不能带走,唯有仆人放 弃自己的自由,永远服侍主人,才能继续拥有妻子儿女(出 21:3-6; 参见申 15:16-17)。对于婢女的规定则不同,"人若卖女儿作婢女,婢女不可像男仆 那样出去。主人选定她归自己,若不喜欢她,就要许她赎身; 主人既然用诡 诈待她,就没有权柄卖给外邦人。主人若选定她给自己的儿子,就当待她如 同女儿。若另娶一个,那女子的吃食、衣服并好合的事,仍不可减少。若不 向她行这三样,她就可以不用钱赎,白白地出去"(出21:7-11)。男女有别, 维护了女性弱势群体利益。

亲子身份决定了家长与子女主宰与被主宰的关系,家长可卖女为奴,但 却不可作出有违上帝旨意的选择,逼女为娼。因为上帝说:"以色列的女子 中不可有妓女"(申 23:17)。"不可辱没你的女儿, 使她为娼妓。恐怕地 上的人专向淫乱,地就满了大恶"(利 19:29)。《利未记》第25章有以色 列人从四围国家或寄居地外人中购买奴仆、婢女的规定。"你们要将他们遗 留给你们的子孙为产业,要永远从他们中间拣出奴仆,只是你们的弟兄以色 列人, 你们不可严严地辖管"(25:46)。外人与以色列人内外有别, 身份 不同,伦理责任和伦理选择也不同。以色列人要从外人手里赎回弟兄。"无 论是他的弟兄、或伯叔、伯叔的儿子、本家的近支,都可以赎他"(25:48-49)。自卖的以色列人也可以自赎,"他要和买主计算,从卖自己的那年 起,算到禧年,所卖的价值照着年数多少,好像工人每年的工价。若缺少的 年数多,就要照着年数,从买价中偿还他的赎价。若到禧年只缺少几年,就 要按着年数和买主计算,偿还他的赎价"(25:49-52)。"你若卖什么给邻 舍,或是从邻舍的手中买什么,彼此不可亏负"(25:14)。"你的弟兄若在 你那里渐渐贫乏,将自己卖给你,不可叫他像奴仆服侍你。他要在你那里像 雇工人和寄居的一样,要服侍你直到禧年,他和他儿女要离开你,一同出去 归回本家,到他祖宗的地业那里去。因为他们是我的仆人,是我从埃及地领 出来的,不可卖为奴仆"(25:39-42)。

摩西律法还有特殊赎买规定。对于被掳的子民,上帝说:"你们是无 价被卖的,也必无银被赎"(赛52:3)。被掳到外邦是因为犯罪受罚,被赎 是因为以色列民是属神的,这一伦理身份决定了他们必然会获得神的拯救, 神也毋须用赎金赎回他们,因为他们是无价被卖的。《利未记》第27章有赎 回献主之物规定,上帝对摩西说: "人还特许的愿,被许的人要按你所估的 价值归给耶和华"(27:1)。按照被许人年龄大小估价,长多幼少,男多女 少。"他若贫穷不能照你所估定的价,就要把他带到祭司面前,祭司要按 许愿人的力量估定他的价"(27:8)。所许的若是牲畜、房屋、承受为业的 地、分别为圣的地、头生的牲畜,由祭司估定价值。但一切永献的,无论是 人,是牲畜,还是承受为业的地,都不可卖,也不可赎(27:28-33)。

摩西律法要求公平交易,禁止欺诈,提倡诚实无欺的贸易原则。"要用 公道天平、公道法码、公道升斗、公道秤" (利 19:35)。"你囊中不可有一 大一小两样的法码; 你家里不可有一大一小两样的升斗。当用对准公平的法 码、公平的升斗"(申 25:13-15)。先知对欺压穷苦人的不公行为发出了愤 怒的谴责: "卖出用小升斗,收银用大戥子,用诡诈的天平欺哄人,好用银 子买贫寒人,用一双鞋换穷乏人,将坏了的麦子卖给人"(摩 8:5-6)。通过 统一度量衡办法来实现公平和诚信的交易,这种做法对后世产生很大影响, 不但演化出公平诚信的现代民法原则,而且推动了度量衡法的发展。

此外,摩西律法强调不可收受贿赂。"不可受贿赂,因为贿赂能叫明眼 人变瞎了,又能颠倒义人的话"(出 23:8)。收受贿赂是一种权钱交易,收 受贿赂后若不公正判案则是完全的堕落,而公正判案也表现出一半的堕落。 这些审判官使判决成为可供购买的商品,这是正义的神绝对不能容忍的。

## 三、劳务雇佣伦理

## (一) 劳务契约伦理

摩西律法要求以色列人在确定劳务雇佣关系时签订劳务契约,或口头,或 书面,两厢情愿,契约一经签订,就要按契约行事,履行各自的责任义务,不 能反悔、违背。这种依据雇主与劳工伦理身份所制定的劳务契约是契约伦理、 程序伦理、意图伦理,它强调按彼此约定的契约程序处世办事,契约是当事人 双方或多方意志和愿望的程序化表现。契约的订立与维护,体现了主体之间的 意志自由、权利平等和义务平等。

例如雅各为娶舅父的小女儿拉结为妻,愿意以服侍拉班七年为工价,"雅 各爱拉结,就说: '我愿为你小女儿拉结服侍你七年'"(创 29:18)。定下 口头契约。但七年后拉班违约,欺骗雅各,让他娶大女儿利亚,七日后才让 他娶拉结,并有附加条件,"你为这个满了七日,我就把那个也给你,你再 为她服侍我七年"(创 29:27)。为了心上人,雅各只好同意了,他娶拉结七 日后"又服侍了拉班七年"(创 29:30)。为了得到羊群,雅各后来又服侍拉 班六年,前后共二十年。

### (二) 劳务报酬伦理

摩西律法要求雇主不得拖欠受雇劳工的工价。"雇工人的工价,不可 在你那里过夜留到早晨"(利19:13)。"要当日给他工价,不可等到日 落,因为他穷苦,把心放在工价上,恐怕他求告耶和华,罪便归你了"(申 24:15)。这一法律条文维护了劳工权益,也是对雇主的伦理规范,要求雇主 诚信、兑现。对于拖欠工薪者,先知发出了愤怒诅咒: "那行不义盖房、/行 不公造楼、/ 白白使用人的手工 / 不给工价的, / 有祸了!"(耶 22:13)《新 约》中使徒也谴责这种拖欠行为: "你们在这末世只知积攒钱财。工人给你 们收割庄稼, 你们亏欠他们的工钱; 这工钱有声音呼叫, 并且那收割之人的 冤声已经入了万军之主的耳了"(雅5:3-4)。

雇主不能随意修改劳工的工价。拉班十次修改雅各的工价, 使他蒙受 劳役之苦而无报偿,遭报应,雅各从拉班手里夺了许多羊群、仆俾、骆驼 和驴。雅各对利亚和拉结说:"神把你们父亲的牲畜夺来赐给我了"(创 31:9)。两姐妹感谢神恩,赞同雅各的做法,"神从我们父亲所夺出来的一 切财物,那就是我们和我们孩子们的。现今凡神所吩咐你的,你只管去行 吧"(创 31:16)。于是,雅各就带着老婆孩子骑上骆驼,带着他在巴旦亚兰 所得的一切牲畜和财物, 往迦南地他父亲以撒那里去了, 拉结还顺便偷走了 他父亲家里的神像,这是对拉班背信弃义、屡次修改工价的报复。

摩西律法以劳务契约、劳务报酬等劳动法和伦理规范保证了劳务关系正 常运转,既保护了劳动者权益,也对劳务关系双方起到约束作用。此外,上 帝以宗教节日保证劳工得以休养生息。安息日、逾越节第一日和第七日、五 旬节、吹角节、赎罪日、住棚节第一日和第八日当有圣会,以色列人(包括 劳工在内)要歇息,什么劳碌的工都不可做(利 23:3、7-8、21、24-25、28-29、36; 参见出 23:10-12; 31:14-17; 35:2-3; 民 28:25; 29:1、7、12; 申 16:8)。安 息年、禧年也是如此。"只是第七年要叫地歇息,不耕不种,使你民中的穷人 有吃的。他们所剩下的,野兽可以吃。你的葡萄园和橄榄园,也要照样办理" (出 23:11)。"第七年, 地要守圣安息, 就是向耶和华守的安息, 不可耕种 田地,也不可修理葡萄园。遗落自长的庄稼,不可收割;没有修理的葡萄树也 不可摘取葡萄。这年, 地要守圣安息。地在安息年所出的, 要给你和你的仆 人、婢女、雇工人,并寄居的外人当食物。〔……〕第五十年要作为你们的禧 年。这年不可耕种, 地中自长的, 不可收割; 没有修理的葡萄树, 也不可摘 取葡萄。因为这是禧年, 你们要当作圣年, 吃地中自出的土产"(利 25:4-6、 11-12) 。

### 四、债权债务伦理

上帝不鼓励负债,也不鼓励为负债的作担保。"欠债的是债主的仆人。 /〔……〕/不要与人击掌,/不要为负债的作保。/你若没有什么偿还,/何 必使人夺去你睡卧的床呢?"(箴 22:7、26-27)债权人和借贷人形成债权债 务关系,也就伴随着权利、责任、义务。上帝对债权人和债务人有规定,其 中蕴含着道德原则和道德规范。

#### (一) 借贷伦理

摩西律法规定,借钱给需要的人,可以是以色列国民、穷乏的弟兄,也 可以是外邦人。因欠债人伦理身份不同,债主伦理选择也不同。"你必借给 许多国民,却不至向他们借贷。〔……〕在耶和华你神所赐你的地上,无论 哪一座城里,你弟兄中若有一个穷人,你不可忍着心、揝着手,不帮补你穷 乏的弟兄; 总要向他松开手, 照他所缺乏的借给他, 补他的不足" (申 15:6, 7-8)。在借给穷乏的弟兄时要甘心情愿,不可起恶念,不可愁烦,不要因为 第七年的豁免年快到了, 便恶眼看待穷乏的弟兄, 什么都不给他, "以致他因 你求告耶和华,罪便归于你了"(申15:9)。债权人这种不道德做法被视为为 一种犯罪行为。如果你知道穷人没有能力偿还,就不可以强迫他归还债务。当 然,上帝也不喜悦那些到期而不偿还债务的,借而不还被视为恶。"恶人借贷 而不偿还"(诗 37:21)。借给弟兄不可取利,借给外邦人可取利。"我民中 有贫穷人与你同住,你若借钱给他,不可如放债的向他取利"(出 22:25)。 对于自己的弟兄, "你要借钱给他,不可向他取利;借粮给他,也不可向他多 要"(利 25:37)。"你借给你兄弟的,或是钱财或是粮食,无论什么可生利 的物,都不可取利。借给外邦人可以取利,只是借给弟兄不可取利。这样,耶 和华你神必在你所去得为业的地上,和你手里所办的一切事上赐福与你"(申 23:19-20)。利息当用于社会慈善事业, "人以厚利加增财物,/是给那怜悯穷 人者积蓄的"(箴 28:8)。

旧约时代已出现物的担保或抵押,在这种情况下债权人也要仁义。不可 用赖以生存的物品作为抵押物,"你即或拿邻舍的衣服作当头,必在日落以 先归还他: 因他只有这一件当盖头, 是他盖身的衣服, 若是没有, 他拿什么 睡觉呢?"(出22:26-27)只能等待债务人自行交出担保物,不可强取。"你 借给邻舍,不拘是什么,不可进他家拿他的当头"(申 24:10)。债权人不可 令抵押者受强迫缴纳抵押物,也不可在抵押者急切需要使用某抵押物的时候 取走抵押物。若抵押者急需抵押物,应该归还抵押物。不可受寡妇的抵押物。

#### (二)债务豁免伦理

《申命记》中有债务豁免规定。"每逢七年末一年,你要施行豁免。豁 免的定例乃是这样:凡债主要把所借给邻舍的豁免了,不可向邻舍和弟兄追 讨,因为耶和华的豁免年已经宣告了。若借给外邦人,你可以向他追讨;但 借给你兄弟, 无论是什么, 你要松手豁免了" (申 15:1-3)。豁免年规定内 外有别,得豁免的是自己的邻居和弟兄,而不是外邦人。

在犹太教中,只有犹太人才是兄弟和姐妹,所有非犹太人都属于外邦人。 也就是说,犹太人放贷给犹太人时不可收利息,但放贷给外邦人时,是可以 收取利息、用钱赚钱的。

### 五、赔偿赎罪伦理

摩西律法制定了极为详细的财产赔偿条例以解决民事纠纷。

- (一)偷盗要赔偿。"人若偷牛或羊,无论是宰了,是卖了,他就要以 五牛赔一牛,四羊赔一羊。〔……〕贼若被拿,总要赔还;若他一无所有, 就要被卖,顶他所偷的物。若他所偷的,或牛,或驴,或羊,仍在他手下存 活,他就要加倍偿还。(……)人若将银钱或家具交付邻舍看守,这物从那 人的家被偷去,若把贼找到了,贼要加倍赔还"(出22:1、3-4,7)。
- (二) 财产损失要赔偿。例如: "人若敞着井口、或挖井不遮盖,有 牛或驴掉在里头, 井主要拿钱赔还本主人, 死牲畜要归自己"(出 21:33-34)。"这人的牛若伤了那人的牛,以至于死,他们要卖了活牛,平分价 值,也要平分死牛。人若知道这牛素来是触人的,主人竟不把牛拴着,他 必要以牛还牛,死牛要归自己"(出 21:35-36)。"打死牲畜的,必赔上牲 畜"(利24:18、21)。又如:

人若在田间或在葡萄园里放牲畜,任凭牲畜上别人的田里去吃,就 必拿自己田间上好的、和葡萄园上好的赔还。若点火焚烧荆棘、以致将 别人堆积的禾捆,站着的禾稼,或是田园,都烧尽了,那点火的必要赔还。

人若将驴,或牛,或羊,或别的牲畜,交付邻舍看守,牲畜或死, 或受伤,或被赶去,无人看见,那看守的人,要凭着耶和华起誓。手里 未曾拿邻舍的物,本主就要罢休,看守的人不必赔还。牲畜若从看守的 那里被偷去,他就要赔还本主;若被野兽撕碎,看守的要带来当作证据, 所撕的不必赔还。

人若向邻舍借什么,所借的或受伤,或死,本主没有同在一处,借 的人总要赔还。若本主同在一处,他就不必赔还;若是雇的,也不必赔还, 本是为雇价来的。(出22:5-6、10-15)

(三)人身伤害要赔偿。摩西律法奉行"同态复仇观",所以规定"故 杀人犯死罪的, 你们不可收赎价代替他的命, 他必被治死"(民 35:31), 但 摩西律法也颁布了为不能断定之杀人案赎罪条例(申21:1-9),有些人身伤 害可以用钱赔偿,作为一种变通和补偿措施。例如:

人若彼此相争,这个用石头或是拳头打那个,尚且不至于死,不过 躺卧在床, 若再能起来扶杖而出, 那打他的可算无罪: 但要将他耽误的 工夫用钱赔补,并要将他全然医好。

( ••••• )

牛若触死男人或是女人, 总要用石头打死那牛, 却不可吃它的肉; 牛的主人可算无罪。倘若那牛素来是触人的,有人报告了牛主,他竟不 把牛拴着, 以致把男人或女人触死, 就要用石头打死那牛, 牛主也必治 死。若罚他赎命的价银,他必照所罚的赎他的命。牛无论触了人的儿子 或是女儿,必照这例办理。牛若触了奴仆或是婢女,必将银子三十舍客 勒给他们的主人,也要用石头把牛打死。(出21:18-19,28-32)

伤害有孕之妇甚至造成堕胎而未致残的,那伤害她的总要按妇人的丈 夫所要的,照审判官所断的受罚赔偿(出21:22)。未婚少女受到伤害,便 是侵犯了她父亲的财产,必须向她父亲作出赔偿。"人若引诱没有受聘的处 女,与她行淫,他总要交出聘礼,娶她为妻。若女子的父亲决不肯将女子给 他,他就要按处女的聘礼,交出钱来"(出22:16-17)。"若有男子遇见没 有许配人的处女,抓住她与她行淫,被人看见,这男子就要拿五十舍客勒银 子给女子的父亲,因他玷污了这女子,就要娶她为妻,终身不可休她"(申 22:28-29)。以色列民族有非常强烈的贞洁观,这条律法是为了保护弱者—— 失贞的女子, 以免她嫁不出去。

- (四)违反婚姻条例要赔偿。人若娶妻,与她同房后恨恶她,信口胡说 新婚妻子失贞, "本城的长老要拿住那人,惩治他,并要罚他一百舍客勒银 子,给女子的父亲,因为他将丑名加在以色列的一个处女身上。女子仍作他 的妻,终身不可休她"(申22:18-19)。
- (五)过犯败诉要赔偿。"两个人的案件,无论是为什么过犯,或是 为牛,为驴,为羊,为衣裳,或是为什么失掉之物,有一人说:'这是我 的',两造就要将案件禀告审判官,审判官定谁有罪,谁就要加倍赔还"(出 22:9) 。
- (六)犯罪亏负人要赔偿。"若有人犯罪,干犯耶和华,在邻舍交付他 的物上,或是在交易上行了诡诈,或是抢夺人的财物,或是欺压邻舍,或是 在捡了遗失的物上行了诡诈,说谎起誓,在这一切的事上犯了什么罪。他既 犯了罪,有了过犯,就要归还他所抢夺的,或是因欺压所得的,或是人交付 他的,或是人遗失他所拾的物,或是他因什么物起了假誓,就要如数归还, 另外加五分之一,在查出他有罪的日子,要交还本主"(利 6:2-5;参见民 5:5-6)。"那人若没有亲属可受所赔还的,那所赔还的就要归与服侍耶和华的祭司, 至于那为他赎罪的公羊是在外"(民 5:8)。

(七)误食圣物要赔偿。"若有人误吃了圣物,要照圣物的原数加上五 分之一,交给祭司"(利 22:14)。上帝还制定了燔祭、素祭、平安祭、赎罪 祭、赎愆祭五祭条例和因罪赔偿细则,通过五祭,使百姓敬神、赎罪、成圣、 新生和平安,祭司有当得的分(利养)。燔祭的供物是没有残疾的公牛和公 羊(绵羊或山羊)、鸟(斑鸠或雏鸽),"燔祭便蒙悦纳,为他赎罪"(利 1:4)。赎罪祭是受膏的祭司、官长或以色列民为自己所犯的罪分别用没有残 疾的公牛犊、公山羊、母山羊、斑鸠或雏鸽所献的火祭(利 4:1-35; 参见民 15:22-29)。 赎愆祭是指以色列人为自己的差错用摩西估定的价格从羊群中牵 一只没有残疾的公绵羊献到上帝面前(利 5:14-19)。在这五祭中, "祭司要 为他们赎罪,他们必蒙赦免"(利4:20;参见利4:26、31、35;5:6、10、13、 16、18; 6:7), "摸这些祭物的,都要成为圣"(利 6:18),帐幕和其中所有 的、亚伦和他的儿子也都成圣(利8:10-15、30)。"娼妓所得的钱,或娈童 (注:原文作'狗')所得的价,你不可带入耶和华你神的殿还愿,因为这两 样都是耶和华所憎恶的。〔……〕你向耶和华你的神许愿,偿还不可迟延,因 为耶和华你的神必定向你追讨,你不偿还就有罪"(申 23:18、21)。上述律 例涉及罪与罚、赎罪与赦免、献祭与成圣等宗教伦理学问题。

《旧约》中的经济伦理属于宗教经济伦理, 犹太教通过摩西律法制定 了财产归属伦理、买卖赎回伦理、劳务雇佣伦理、债权债务伦理、赔偿赎罪 伦理,确立了公平公正、民族利益、群体共享等道德原则,希望子民遵循尊 卑有序、内外有别、诚信仁义等道德规范。在以色列人的财产归属、买卖赎 回、劳务雇佣、赔偿赎罪、债权债务等经济活动中, "所有伦理问题的产生 往往都同伦理身份相关"(聂珍钊 263),伦理身份在伦理选择中发挥了重 要作用,与伦理责任密切相关。"上帝是一位经济学家"(Wagner-Tsukamoto 249、250、252), 建立了巧妙的、制度性的经济秩序(clever institutional economic ordering),倡导勤劳致富。"当时成功的经济秩序使以色列成为一 个强大而富有的国家,成功地与邻国保持了稳定关系"(Wagner-Tsukamoto 9),其个人私有财产神圣不可侵犯观念、公平诚信原则、施舍伦理、劳务伦 理、借贷伦理、赔偿伦理以及契约精神、平等观念、仁爱主张对后世产生了 深远影响,从中我们也可以看到伦理身份对于伦理责任和伦理选择的决定性 作用。

#### **Works Cited**

詹姆斯·乔治·弗雷泽:《〈旧约〉中的民间传说——宗教、神话和律法的比较研究》,叶舒宪、 户晓辉译。西安:陕西师范大学出版总社有限公司,2012年。

[Frazer, James George. Folk-lore in the Old Testament: Studies in Comparative Religion, Legend and Law, translated by Ye Shuxian and Hu Xiaohui, Xi'an: Shaanxi Normal UP Co. LTD, 2012.]

- 《圣经》(中英对照)中文和合本新国际版,南京:中国基督教三自爱国运动委员会、中国基 督教协会出版,2007年。
- [Holy Bible. Chinese/English. Chinese Union Version, New International Version. Nanjing: National Committee of Three-Self Patriotic Movement of the Protestant Churches in China and China Christian Council, 2007.]
- 聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。
- [Nie Zhenzhao. An Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]
- North, Gary. An Economic Commentary on the Bible. Vol.31, Dallas: Point Five Press, 2012.
- Orlinsky, Harry M. "The Biblical Concept of the Land of Israel: Cornerstone of the Covenant between God and Israel." The Land of Israel: Jewish Perspectives, edited by JoseL. A. Huffman. Notre Dame: Notre Dame UP, 1986. 27-64.
- Wagner-Tsukamoto, Sigmund. Is God an Economist?: An Institutional Economic Reconstruction of the Old Testament. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan, 2009.
- 莱特: 《旧约伦理学》, 黄龙光译。北京: 中央编译出版社, 2014年。
- [Wright, Christopher J. H. Old Testament Ethics for the People of God, translated by Huang Longguang. Beijing: Central Compilation & Translation Press, 2014.]
- 叶秋华: "希伯来法论略——古代东方法律文化中的一朵奇葩",《法学家》5(1999):33-41。
- [Ye Qiuhua. "Discussion on Hebrew Law: A Wonderful Flower in Ancient Oriental Legal Culture." The Jurist 5 (1999): 33-41.]

"对话"理念下成功办刊的典范: 拉尔夫·科恩与《新文学史》四十年

A Model of Success for Journal Publication under the Philosophy of "Dialogism": Ralph Cohen and *New Literary History* in Its Forty Years

李思伊 (Li Siyi) 杨 枫 (Yang Feng)

内容摘要:《新文学史》是美国文学界具有代表性的文学理论研究刊物,在国际人文研究领域享有盛誉。"对话"理念是该刊的核心办刊理念,贯穿办刊全过程,也是该刊产生学术影响力的关键所在。在创刊主编拉尔夫•科恩带领下,该刊在以下层面贯彻"对话"理念:通过期刊选题策划与封面设计,实现期刊与学科之间的对话;通过栏目策划与任务分配,实现编者同学者之间的对话;通过征稿范围的预先设定以及向不同学术背景的学者约稿,实现学者同学者之间的对话;通过顾问编辑的选择以及期刊同研究机构及出版机构等的合作实现文化同文化之间的对话。

关键词:期刊;《新文学史》;对话;办刊理念;学术

作者简介: 李思伊, 上海交通大学外国语学院博士研究生, 主要研究领域为知识翻译学、比较文学、诗学比较研究; 杨枫, 上海交通大学外国语学院教授、博士生导师, 主要研究领域为知识翻译学、比较文学。

**Title:** A Model of Success for Journal Publication under the Philosophy of "Dialogism": Ralph Cohen and *New Literary History* in Its Forty Years

Abstract: New Literary History, the most representative academic journal on literary theory research in American literary circles, enjoys high reputation and exerts a powerful influence in the international humanities research area. "Dialogism", its core publication philosophy, weaves the thread of the publication process for all issues of the journal, which affords the key to its great success in extending its academic influence. As the founding editor of the journal, Ralph Cohen plays the leading role in carrying his philosophy of "dialogism" into action by opening the following dialogues: (1) the dialogue between the journal and the academic discipline through topic selection and cover design; (2) dialogue between editors and scholars through column planning and task allocation; (3) dialogue

between scholars themselves through narrowing the scope of "Call for Papers" and soliciting contributions from scholars with different academic backgrounds; (4) dialogue between different cultures through selection of consultant editors and collaboration between the journal and research institutions and publishing institutions.

**Keywords:** journal; *New Literary History*; dialogism; publication philosophy; academic research

Authors: Li Sivi is Ph.D. candidate at Shanghai Jiao Tong University (Shanghai 200240, China). His academic research focuses on transknowletology, business translation, financial translation, comparative literature and comparative poetics (Email: leeseeyee@126.com). Yang Feng is Professor, Doctoral Supervisor at Shanghai Jiao Tong University (Shanghai 200240, China). His academic research focuses on transknowletology and comparative literature (Email: efone1988@163. com).

学术期刊,作为刊登学术成果的载体,不仅促进学术交流与学术传播, 还折射社会舆论动向,推动社会思想进步与发展。有学识、胸襟与视野的期 刊主编,对广大学者来说具有感召力,并能以期刊为纽带,将他们团结在一 起,共同推动学术思想的产生,倡导学术风气的形成。'换言之,期刊的主编 影响学术期刊的学术品格与质量,其学术水准奠定学术期刊的地位,期刊的 地位反过来又会确立起学术期刊的社会影响力。因此,期刊与主编的名字往 往密不可分,相互映衬。正如我们谈起《新青年》就想到陈独秀;谈起《国 学季刊》就想起胡适; 谈起《湘江评论》就想起毛泽东<sup>2</sup>, 这同样适用于海 外文学学术期刊。回顾上世纪美国文学理论热潮,绕不过的是文学理论期刊 《新文学史》(New Literary History),而提到《新文学史》,绕不过的则是 创刊主编拉尔夫·科恩(Ralph Cohen)。

《新文学史》主要刊登文学史及文学批评理论方面的文章,对上世纪70 年代以来文学理论的嬗变影响深远,是美国文学界具有代表性的刊物。在该 刊上发表论文的作者除佳亚特里·斯皮瓦克(Gayatri Spivak)、乔纳森·卡 勒(Jonathan Culler)等文学界知名学者外,还有尤尔根·哈贝马斯(Jürgen Habermas)、希拉里·普特南(Hilary Putnam)、海登·怀特(Hyden White)、弗雷德里克·詹姆逊(Fredric Jameson)、理查德·罗蒂(Richard Rorty)等来自哲学、历史学、文化批评界的学者。这些学者来自不同族群、 不同大学、不同学术背景、不同学术流派。他们有着自己的学术主张并维护自

<sup>1</sup> 参见 龙协涛: "学术繁荣与期刊主编", 《北京行政学院学报》4(2007): 1-3。

<sup>2</sup> 参见 龙协涛: "学术繁荣与期刊主编", 《北京行政学院学报》4(2007): 1-3。

己的学术主张,借助《新文学史》这个平台展开论争。作为主编,该如何对待 这些不同乃至针锋相对的观点,采取什么措施让这些学者们同场竞技、平等交 流、平等对话,是有赖其办刊策略与智慧的。《新文学史》之所以能在创刊后 短短数年时间里成为文学研究学术期刊的翘楚,并在接下来的几十年里一直扮 演文学研究先行者角色,全依赖创立并执掌该刊四十年的主编科恩始终秉承并 践行的对话的办刊理念。本文拟介绍《新文学史》的创刊背景与办刊理念,从 "期刊同学科之间的对话"、"编辑同学者之间的对话"、"学者同学者之间 的对话"以及"文化同文化之间的对话"等几个方面,探讨科恩的办刊理念。

## 《新文学史》的创刊背景与办刊理念

上世纪60年代末,科恩应弗吉尼亚大学欧文·艾文普莱斯(Irvin Ehrenpreis)和马丁·巴特斯廷(Martin Battestin)之邀,离开加州大学洛杉 矶分校,前往弗吉尼亚大学任教。来弗吉尼亚大学后,科恩便向校长埃德 加·夏农(Edgar Shannon)提议要创办一本文学理论刊物,但校长起初对 此并不热心,或许是因为双方在文学研究理念上存在分歧,但科恩结合自身 过往学术经历,主张学术期刊在文学研究方面应打破以往那种封闭自足的模 式,坚持认为,"急需有一本期刊将文学研究与历史和其他相关学科联系在一 起(……)有必要将文学与艺术、哲学、人类学及其他相关学科联系起来进 行研究"(Cohen, "Notes" A2) 1。科恩认为,文学研究就应该从多视角,尤其 是从多学科视角来进行,以便让文学与其他学科在相互碰撞中擦出火花。此 观点与夏农的学术主张不尽一致。尽管夏农对科恩的提议不热心,但最终还 是提供了有条件的为期三年的经济支持。三年后,若刊物"不能自主经营或 获得学界认可,资助将中止"(Cohen, "Notes" A2)。

于是,科恩终于办起了《新文学史》这一刊物。科恩对刊物的未来充 满信心。这种信心源自他过往的学术生涯和从事编辑工作的经历。他专攻18 世纪英国文学,在创刊之前,就已在《英语研究》(The Review of English Studies) 《现代语言研究》 (The Modern Language Review) 《肯尼恩评论》 (The Kenyon Review) 《现代语言札记》(Modern Language Notes)等众多 国际学术刊物上发表论文数十篇,还出版过众多学术专著。科恩早年丰硕 的研究成果奠定了他在文学界的学术地位,同时他也因此而能够同众多从事 相关研究的学者进行交流。这些也为他在创办期刊早期能登载大量高质量 论文奠定了基础,因为他"向同行学术大家约稿一般很少被拒绝"(王宁 212)。在创办期刊前,科恩做过出版社编辑。在洛杉矶分校工作期间,他曾 担任《美学与艺术批评》(Journal of Aesthetics and Art Criticism)杂志的受 托人。他的这些从业经验,让他深知自己及学界急需到底是怎样的一本学术 期刊,也让他知道该如何把自己的理念付诸期刊的设计和运作当中。

<sup>1</sup> 外文引文均出自笔者译,部分英文名为笔者添加。

他从热内·韦勒克(René Wellek)和克莱恩(R. S. Crane)等学者那里获 得灵感: 以文学史写作的新方法该有多重要。韦勒克曾在著作《文学原理》的 "文学史"一章中写道,"新方法将能实现一种新的文学史理想并使这种实现 成为可能"(Wellek and Warren 281),新方法包括在文学研究之中融入"文 学进化、文学体裁与类型、文学时期问题以及文学艺术的通史"(Wellek and Warren 272-282)。克莱恩则在《文学史的批评和历史原则》中强调,要探究 "自古希腊时期以来支配文学史写作的批评与历史原则"(Crane 1)。科恩 认为,就文学本质、文学批评方法和文学研究目标等问题进行讨论,会有助 于文学史研究。审视这些问题阐释的原则和步骤、重新思考它的理论和方法 等,能够让人们从新的视角来界定文学史,因此他要为《新文学史》"制定 一套规程,使得用不同的方法做出的分析将围绕理论和阐释来展开"(Cohen, "Notes" A3)

科恩将这个充满了他的意志与构想的刊物命名为"新文学史",并加 上小标题"一本有关理论与阐释的期刊"。自此,《新文学史》便结束了 此前美国文学界"不曾有任何期刊讨论文学历史中有关理论与阐释之问题" (Cohen, "A Note" 3) 的历史而成为第一本专注文学理论研究的刊物。刊物名 称"新"、"文学"、"史"三者之关系亦充满趣味与意义。"'新'既是 对'新批评'之'新'的挑战,用以修饰'文学史'也暗示过去和现在都需 对此进行重新思考(……)'文学'与'历史'之关系也需进行重新思考" (Cohen, "Notes" A5)。"新文学史"也意味着文学史的书写是不断前行的过 程,唯有不断审视过去、思考现在、探索未来,才能在真正意义上写出"新 的"文学史。正如《新文学史》编委阿拉克(Jonathan Arac)所说: "《新文 学史》告诉我们, 唯有思想所到之处, 才可建立起新的文学史"(Arac 703)。

从内容看,文学理论是《新文学史》的核心。从形式看,对话是其灵 魂,也是贯穿该刊办刊五十余年的核心理念。科恩认为,"该刊的目标之一 就是对话交流"(Cohen, "Notes" A10),即便学者们观点相左,彼此之间 也应相互包容、平等交流。结合科恩此前的"应当从多学科视角来审视文学 研究"这一主张,"对话交流"就不应仅仅停留在学者层面。事实上,《新 文学史》的对话理念不仅体现期刊同学科之间的对话中,也蕴含在编者同学 者、学者同学者、文化同文化之间的对话中。

## 期刊同学科之间的对话

创办该刊,科恩就是希望让文学研究与其他学科联系起来。现在,我们 来看看该刊是如何推动期刊同其他学科之间的对话的。该刊展开对话的方式 有二: 刊物征稿启事; 让学术机构与刊物合作。

通常, 征稿启事是编辑部针对本刊特点所制定的有关稿件征集和编辑出

<sup>1</sup> 参见《新文学史》封面页。

版的简要规则¹, 其作用在于: 说明刊物征稿范围、研究重点、格式规范、 写作要求等,以吸引有相关研究兴趣者投稿。从该刊第一卷第一期"欢迎来 稿"中可看出,三类稿件受到欢迎: (一)论述文学理论的文章,探讨的话 题有:文学嬗变之成因;不同时期文学理论的界定及其在阐释中的运用;不 同风格、不同规约、不同语类的演进和风格、规约、语类等彼此之关系以及 它们与不同繁荣时期之关系:不同文学史之相互关联性:文学史中评价的地 位等: (二)有助于阐释或定义文学史的其他学科视角的文章; (三)论述 高校文学史课之基础与功用的文章。2

创刊号征文启事就《新文学史》编辑部认定的文学理论范围进行了界 定,并以"实例说明到底什么可归入到'文学'的'理论'范畴,什么可 归入到'文学史'的'理论'范畴"(Cohen, "Notes" A13)。上文第三点 凸显了该刊对高校文学史课的重视。第二点亦值得关注:该刊强调,要从 跨学科视角研究文学史。这让非文学专业的研究者也有机会参与到文学史 的探究中来。于是从第一期开始,来自不同学科背景的学者便在《新文学 史》这个舞台上活跃了起来。1969年出版的第一期主题为"文学史问题"。撰 稿人除文学研究者外,还有哲学家詹姆斯·卡梅隆(James Cameron)、乔 治·普莱(Georges Poulet)和罗伯特·韦曼(Robert Weimann)等。第二期 主题是"关于时期的讨论",撰稿人有艺术史研究者E·H·贡布里希(E. H. Gombrich)、乔治·库不勒(George Kubler),政治学家丹特·格米诺 (Dante Germino), 历史学家亨利·梅 (Henry May)等。1971年第三期主 题是"现代主义与后现代主义:探索、反思与遐"》,撰稿人有作曲家约 翰·凯奇(John Cage)、乔治·罗奇伯格(George Rochberg)等。

但总体看,早期的《新文学史》主要是从哲学、历史、艺术、语言学、 社会学等传统的人文社科领域汲取思想精华。在第一版征稿启事中,该刊强 调其他学科能帮助阐释并界定"文学史"这一概念。对于非文学专业的研究 者而言,"文学史"这一概念更多地同社会、历史、艺术等因素密切相关。 可以说,该刊虽然开启了跨学科视角,但对研究对象的界定稍显狭窄,这也 限制了其他学科进入文学研究领域。于是,该刊在第八卷(1976)第一期对 征稿启事的表述进行了调整,将之前的三类稿件压缩成两类: (一)文学理 论文章,涉及文学理论的性质、文学的目的、文学史观、阅读过程、阐释 学、语言学与文学之关系、文学嬗变、文学价值、对于不同时期的各种定义 以及这些定义在阐释中的各种运用、风格的演变、各种惯例以及各种体裁 等: (二)源自其他学科的、有助于解释或定义文学史以及文学研究之各种 问题的文章3。从新版本的征稿启事来看,《新文学史》首先扩大了研究领

<sup>1</sup> 参见 自羽红: "征稿简则的规范化探析", 《编辑学报》 5 (2009): 401-402。

<sup>2</sup> 参见《新文学史》1969-1975年间"欢迎来稿"页。

<sup>3</sup> 参见《新文学史》1976年至今"欢迎来稿"页。

域,不仅涵盖原有的文学原理,还包括文学理论1;其次拓展了跨学科的范 围,因为来自其他学科的文章不再只局限于文学史各类问题的探究,还可拓 展到文学研究之中。之前、《新文学史》希望其他学科能帮助定义文学史问 题, 故来自历史、艺术、哲学、社会学等学科领域的学者往往能从各自的学 科出发,帮助总结文学发展规律,划分文学形式、文学流派等发展与演变的 历史时期,寻找其中可能产生影响的因素。该启事还鼓励其他学科的研究者 进入文学研究领域, 关注那些文学研究者可能忽视的文学现象, 包括那些涉 及到物理学、医学、经济学等现象所做描写。对于纯文学研究者而言,这些 现象往往是"盲点",唯有所涉专门学科的专业研究者才有可能透过现象看 到本质,因而产生"洞见"。对此《新文学史》编辑戈登·亨特(Gordon Hunter) 曾评价道:

《新文学史》向来创新大胆, 现已吸纳各类撰稿人, 有公共政策分 析师、经济学教授、法学教授、化学工程教授等,还有哲学家、人类学家、 心理分析学家、社会学家及其他很多学科领域的专家。他们一直是该刊 物所依赖的文学理论家、他们有着文学史学家几乎难以在其他地方找到 的视角。(Hunter 737)

该刊对于编辑同学科之间对话的强调,还表现在研究机构的创立与该 刊特刊的设立上。20世纪80年代中期,为顺应弗吉尼亚州政府提升高等教育 水平的政策,科恩受大学之托,提出设立"文学与文化变革研究中心"之构 想。为避免该项目对大学各项规程造成大的改变,科恩设想,该研究中心应 对物理、生物、化学、工程等科学以及对法律、医学和商业等专业类学校产 生影响,其"目的是在大学里培养起一种对艺术学科、自然科学、宗教研 究、人文学科与职业学院之相互关系进行研究的意识,并为教育创新提供合 作基础"(Cohen, "Notes" A17)。1989年该研究中心成立后,科恩号召校 内各学科研究者以及访问学者从各自的学科专业出发, 提供与文学相关的选 题,依照选题定期召开研讨会,并将研讨会的成果载于《新文学史》。为 此,科恩自1990年始,将《新文学史》由一年三期改为季刊,其中每年第四 期为当年特刊,专门刊载来自文学与文化变革研究中心的文章。此外,部分 来自中心的文章也成为未来该刊的选题来源。比如,该中心于1989年举行三

<sup>1</sup> 文学原理(Theory of Literature)是总体的、普遍性的文学理论,关注的是一般原理、范畴 和标准问题,旨在反思文学、文学批评以及文学史的情况。文学理论(Literary Theory)是局部 的、多样的,关注的是意义或价值的产生或接受等问题。有关文学原理(Theory of Literature) 与文学理论(Literary Theory)的区别,参见 Rene Wellek and Austin Warren, Theory of Literature, London: Jonathan Cape, 1949, 31-33; Rene Wellek, "Literary Theory, Criticism and History," The Sewanee Review 1 (1960): 1-19; Antonie Compagnon, Literature, Theory and Common Sense, Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2004, 10-11 的论述。

次大型研讨会,主题有"重新思考科学与人文"、"文化距离:对他者的跨 学科研究"、"进化: 跨学科研讨会"等。研讨会中的一部分论文被选入次 年该刊的第四期加以刊载,刊载的文章有在"进化:跨学科研讨会"上参与 讨论的物理与天文学研究者约翰·巴罗(John Barrow)的文章"宇宙的进 化"等。也有一部分论文间接促成了未来《新文学史》刊物的选题来源。比 如在"文化距离:对他者的跨学科研究"研讨会上参与讨论的温迪•多尼格 (Wendy Doniger)的文章"合理化非理性的他者:'东方主义'与摩奴定 律" ("Rationalizing the Irrational Other: Orientalism and the Laws of Manu"), 还有印度学者阿西斯·南蒂(Ashis Nandy)的文章"内部的他者"("The Otherness Inside")等,共同促成了1992年《新文学史》第一期的选题"他者 的不同种类"("Versions of Otherness")<sup>1</sup>。

可以说,《新文学史》对于期刊同学科之对话的强调,是从宏观和微观 两个层面展开的。宏观上,该刊通过征稿启事,强调从跨学科视角进行研究 的重要性,为刊物整体征文风格奠定了基础,也让不同学科的学者有更多机 会进入文学研究领域: 微观上, 《新文学史》通过建立学术机构以及通过学 术机构与刊物进行合作,使得该刊对于文学具体可涉及到的学科有更准确的 把握。

## 编辑同学者之间的对话

《新文学史》强调期刊同学科之间的对话,使得有着不同学科背景的 学者能在《新文学史》这个平台上发表文章。但这也造成一个潜在难题:不 同视角下的文章数量可观,可这些研究零碎且不深入。这无疑让这些文章的 学术价值大打折扣。为解决这一问题,《新文学史》采用专刊模式:编辑选 择刊物的每期主题, 定义要展开研究的新问题和涉及的新领域, 邀请来自不 同学科背景的学者用不同的、彼此矛盾的观点予以回应。这便使得就该主题 所作的讨论更深刻而不流于表面。如果将科恩任主编期间的所有刊物进行审 视便可发现,在全部108期刊物中,每一期都有独特的主题;且在这108期 刊物中,有106期单从刊物的主题表述上,便可知道当期所探讨的内容。 这些表述均由科恩本人拟定并印于封面上,如《什么是文学?》(What is Literature?) (1973)、《文学与/作为伦理学》(Literature and/as Moral

<sup>&</sup>quot;文化距离:对他者的跨学科研究"为弗吉尼亚大学"文学与文化变革研究中心"1990年 春季会议之一。多尼格、南蒂以及 R. S. 卡尔 (R. S. Khare) 为这期会议邀请嘉宾, 其中卡尔为 会议作引言介绍。1992年《新文学史》特刊《他者的不同种类》收录三人文章,并且当期其 他作者并未出现在文学与文化变革中心 1990 以及 1991 年度会议计划名单中,故而认为多尼格 与南蒂的文章对促成该期选题有较大作用。参见 Ralph Cohen, "Common Wealth Center for Literary and Cultural Change: Programs 1989-1990," New Literary History 4 (1990): 1067; Ralph Cohen, "Common Wealth Center for Literary and Cultural Change: Programs 1990-1991," New Literary History 4 (1991): 1105-1113. 以及《新文学史》1992 年卷 23 第 1 期目录页。

Philosophy) (1983)、《全球化时代的文学史》 (Literary History in the *Global Age*)(2008)等。

选题策划是编辑工作的重点和难点,因为选题策划需具前瞻性,需在现 有学术基础上开辟新的研究路径,从而将"理论研究不断引向新领域"(刘 建明 李永春 93)。对于文学理论期刊而言,优秀的选题不仅要告诉学者们当 前文学理论研究领域到底发生了什么,还要让他们了解学界对文学理论研究 有怎样的期待。优秀的选题策划有赖于主编深厚的学术功底和敏锐的学术洞 察力,以及对于值得深究的课题的脉搏的把握。

《新文学史》的选题策划大多由科恩本人亲自完成,但这并不意味着 这一工作是科恩的一言堂。恰恰相反,该刊的选题都是编者和学者对话的结 果。相较于单纯以当前学界热点研究话题为刊物主题,科恩更愿意以一篇有 潜力、有讨论价值的论文为核心,来规划期刊的选题。为此,科恩一方面花 费大量精力阅读海内外期刊杂志,"若发现任何一篇有价值的文章,他就直 接联系作者"(William 697)向作者征稿。另一方面,他与学界同行保持密 切联系并进行交流,寻找能引发学者讨论与思考的话题,并尝试以这些论文 或话题作为期刊的选题。

美国哲学家玛莎·努斯鲍姆(Martha Nussbaum)对此深有体会。1980 年,努斯鲍姆在弗吉尼亚大学访学期间,曾与科恩讨论文学与哲学之关系 等问题,科恩不仅提供具体意见,还鼓励努斯鲍姆将她的思路写成论文。次 年,在一次哲学研讨会上,努斯鲍姆宣读了题为"有瑕疵的水晶:詹姆斯 的〈金碗〉与作为道德哲学的文学"("Flawed Crystals: James's The Golden Bowl and Literature as Moral Philosophy")的论文,并随后将该文投稿至《新 文学史》1。科恩对此文关涉的有关伦理学与文学的主题非常感兴趣,随即在 1983年以该文为核心,组建了题为《文学与/作为伦理学》的专刊,邀请哲学 家希拉里·普特南(Hilary Putnam)、大卫·西多斯基(David Sidorsky)、 大卫·戴斯·拉斐尔(D. D. Raphael)以及文学研究者穆雷·科里格(Murray Krieger)等众多学者共同撰文参与讨论。这期刊物直接引发了美国学界关于 文学伦理学的重新思考。"沉寂多年的文学伦理批评得以复兴,并在文学和 人文领域掀起一股研究浪潮,让人们重新关注起文学与伦理学的关系,并出 现了'伦理转向'"(杨革新 53)。努斯鲍姆自己也评价道,是科恩"勇 敢而慷慨地打开了一扇门,让文学学者和哲学学者对文学和哲学之间的联系 有了更深刻的理解"(Nussbaum 765)。这期刊物之后,安东尼·卡斯卡迪 (Antony Cascardi)的著作《文学及哲学的问题》(Literature and the Question of Philosophy) (1987),以及1997年、1998年两期在理论研究刊物《哲学 与文学》(Philosophy and Literature)上所展开的讨论,或多或少都受到这一

See Martha Nusbaum, "Ralph Cohen and the Dialogue between Philosophy and Literature," New Literary History 4 (2009): 758-760.

期刊物的影响。对此,努斯鲍姆对科恩及《新文学史》在这一波学术热潮中 所发挥的作用肯地评价道:"这期刊物是拉尔夫•科恩展现其非凡能力的典 范。他能甄别出一定会发生的重大辩论,然后为该辩论的发生奠定基础—— 引领学术热潮,而不是被学术热潮所引领"(Nussbaum 760)。

编者同学者之间的对话还反映在《新文学史》封面的设计上。通常,学 术期刊的封面设计"尽量保持庄重、严肃"(郭游11)的风格,以体现学术 研究的知识性、专业性、严肃性和权威性。但就《新文学史》而言,其研究 领域 —— 文学理论 —— 并非完全是受理性支配,而是同时蕴涵着人文学科 感性与艺术的统一。因此,《新文学史》的封面设计在保证整体设计风格前 后一致的前提下,还特别加上与刊物主题相关的插图。关于这一点,科恩指 出, "在一本以语言来运作的刊物中,这些封面表明,非语言学科还可起到 注释作用"(Cohen, "Notes" A7)。即是说,《新文学史》封面的插图不仅要 与当期主题有关,还要起到一定注释作用,以彰显编者对该主题的思考与呼 应。如在 1970 年第二卷第一期的主题为"文学史过时了吗?"("Is Literary History Obsolete?") 这一期当中,科恩选了一副踏云的飞马作封面插画。在西 方语境下,飞马很容易让学者们——尤其是文学研究者们——联想到希腊 神话中的飞马珀伽索斯(Pegasus)。相传珀伽索斯从女妖美杜莎(Medusa) 的血中飞上天,后来降落到属于文艺女神缪斯(Muses)的赫利孔山(Mt. Helikon),并在此创造了希波克里尼灵感泉(Hippocrene)。该泉涌出的泉水, 顾名思义,能激发文人墨客的灵感和创造力1。科恩用飞马这个插画,具象地 表达了他对该主题的态度,并希望通过该插画,让该刊所有读者听到编者对 每期主题的回应: 文学史的构建依靠文学作品的写作和与之相伴的文学批评 的书写; 文学作品和文学批评源自诗人、作家、批评家的灵感和创造; 灵感 不灭, 文学史便永恒。

有关《新文学史》封面插画的例子还有许多。从1969年到1985年间,总 共51期刊物均有各自独立的封面插画。这些插画既保持了该刊的学术性,又 凸显了其艺术性。可惜这一传统到1986年后,或出于成本考虑,或基于其他 考虑,终未沿袭下来。《新文学史》在封面设计上使用插画以回应主题这一 构想,无疑是匠心独运。这不仅是彰显该刊有别于其他刊物的举措,也是从 视觉上建立起编者同学者对话的桥梁;或许,它还或多或少扮演了提醒的角 色,暗示了读者们、科恩以及该刊本身对于文学研究的理念:文学研究从来 都不是独立的或孤立的,文学以外的诸多学科同样有可能进入到文学研究领 域。

可以说,选题策划与封面设计是直接展示编者同学者对话的两扇窗口。 就《新文学史》而言,一个文学理论问题起源于一个学者的思考,但该问题

<sup>1</sup> See Robin Hard, The Routledge Handbook of Greek Mythology, London and New York: Routledge, 2004, 330.

出现伊始,也许只是较为初级的问题,它需要编者将其挖掘出来,通过策划 选题的方式将它展示在期刊上,并邀请学者们一同讨论,予以完善,从而逐 步将这一稚嫩的想法转变成一种成熟的思想。因此,选题策划是编者同学者 对话的结果,它需建立在编者同学者进行学术交流的基础上。没有充分有效 的学术沟通,就不会出现有价值的选题。同学者进行交流能帮助编者掌握全面、 崭新的学术信息,从而在选题策划时能及时反映出学术研究的最新面貌以及 编者基于研究现状而对未来的展望与期盼。优秀的选题策划能为期刊带来高 质量的学术讨论,而符合刊物当期主题以及内容特点的封面设计,则能为这 一场思想的碰撞锦上添花。它不仅无损于刊物的学术性,还能将编者对主题 的想法充分展示在学者们面前。

### 学者同学者之间的对话

学者同学者之间的跨期刊、跨时间的"遥相呼应"屡见不鲜,但同刊同 期的"同场论道"则为数不多。《新文学史》是按主题规划每期刊物,学者 们在针对该主题撰写文章时, 因受制于各自学科背景或学派理念, 难免在观 点上会相左乃至冲突, 抑或相互矛盾, 但正是这种情形, 为学者同学者之间 的对话提供了契机。简单地在刊物上罗列各自不同的观点并非对话。如何让 学者同学者之间就刊物的主题展开有效讨论,如何让不同理论之间产生关联、 实现对话,则需主编在刊物的整体架构上做好顶层设计。

为了让学者同学者之间的对话能顺利进行,科恩要求每位稿件被录用 者"阅读(当期)所有文章,并就他们想发表的任何言论发表评论"(Cohen, "Notes" A4)。即是说,任何稿件被录用者,不仅要对当期刊物的主题阐述自 己的观点,还要在理解其他学者观点的基础上做出回应。要知道,"在进行 解释时——仅仅存在一个意识,一个主体:在进行理解时——则存在两个意 识,两个主体。( ......) 理解在某种程度上总是具有对话性的"(转引自 周 启超 128)。《新文学史》对学者们的这一要求无疑为学者同学者之间的对话 敞开了大门。

自创刊始,科恩便对《新文学史》期刊栏目做出规划,以便于学者同学 者之间展开合理、有序的讨论,栏目分三个板块:导言、论文和讨论。导言 板块通常由科恩或科恩邀请的学者撰写,主要针对本期的主题作介绍;论文 板块为主体,收录学者就本期刊物主题所撰论文:讨论板块则是学者们在各 自论文基础上,就相互之间的不同观点撰文做进一步探讨。早期讨论板块收 录的文章较为驳杂,但是,学者之间的相互质疑、探讨、评论以及经相互启 发后作进一步的研究论证等类文章均被纳入此板块。

自 1971 年始, 科恩就讨论板块进一步细化和调整。他依照所收录文章的 特点将该板块分为回复(Reply)、回应(Response)和点评(Commentary) 三个栏目。回复栏目类似答疑,学者们在此回答其他撰稿人提出的质疑。该 栏目收录的文章通常篇幅不长,以回答问题、对某一质疑作进一步解释或为 自我观点辩护为主。回应栏目则更似辩论。在此栏目, 学者们需从自己的立 场出发,对其他学者的观点进行评论,或基于双方观点展开进一步探讨。回 应栏目收录的文章, 内容多为发散式, 篇幅较回复栏目中的文章更长, 且以 完整论文形式撰写的文章居多。可以说,这些文章均是学者同学者之间思想 火花碰撞后的成果,是该刊独具特色的栏目。

点评栏目对当期刊物所有文章进行点评。每期都有一个或多个点评人"对 当期所收录的所有文章进行分析并解决所提出的问题。同时,还鼓励他们提 出可能或应列入讨论的内容"(Cohen, "Notes" A4)。即点评人有两个任务: 一是指出当期收录稿件的亮点与不足, 二是审视当期主题, 以挖掘出未来可 能的研究路径。此外,点评人的学科背景也是科恩考虑的因素。通常,他会 选择一个研究兴趣能涵盖所有撰稿人学科背景的学者作为点评人。为使点评 栏目有序进行并能让作者们有所收获,科恩会亲自邀请多位学者,并对他们 的点评给予方向性引导。比如,在谈起就该刊1981年第13卷第一期《惯例(一)》 时,科恩这样说:

选择该主题,是因为"惯例"既是日常用语,又是众多学科的概 念,目的是检验它在不同话语体系里的作用,揭示它在形成学科话语特 征和学科行为特征时的优缺点。〔……〕要求三位点评人弄清每位撰 稿人如何理解"惯例"之含义及其重要性、局限性、起源和发展等。 海登·怀特仔细审读每篇论文,提炼其论点并添加自己对"惯例"的 见解。(·····)惯例,在保罗·瓦莱西奥看来,如果被正确理解,就可 以对读者带来新的重要影响。〔……〕戴蒙德评论了每位撰稿人就"惯 例"的积极含义和消极含义进行论证的方式,并以仪式为例,把仪式看 成是惯例。(Cohen, "Notes" A13)

从形式上看,《新文学史》的栏目规划为不同学者之间展开对话与交流 提供了机制上的保障,从而让不同理论流派在此相遇,"实现某种温和的文学 民主"(Cixous 751)。回复、回应以及点评栏目与刊物主体的论文部分相得 益彰。回复栏目能让作者进一步解释论文中有可能带来疑惑之处,回应栏目 为不同作者之间的相互阐发提供场所,而点评栏目则从更高维度对论文及刊 物主题进行审视。可以说,这三个栏目让学者们既能相互对话、相互启发, 又能得到适时指引。正如艾伦·西苏(Hélène Cixous)和劳伦特·米莱西(Laurent Milesi) 在"致敬科恩"一文中所说:

所有生活在这个虚拟的星球上、到处传播的显然是以自我为中心却 往往又互不相容的思想观点的人,会明白我在这里想要说的话:我们就

是需要一个叫拉尔夫·科恩的人,即是说,一个过路人,一个好的导体— 接收器,来接通电流,避免短路,最重要的是,来让各种邂逅发生。而 这一切,如果不是他,就不可能发生。(Cixous 752)

### 文化同文化之间的对话

1976年,约翰·霍普金斯大学出版社接管了《新文学史》的发行工作, 并在第八卷第一期中插入广告,强调了《新文学史》在美国与欧洲学界沟通 中所起作用: "它向英语世界介绍了当今一些最重要的理论家:汉斯•罗 伯特·姚斯(Hans Robert Jauss)、沃尔夫冈·伊瑟(Wolfgang Iser)、尤 里·洛特曼(Yuri Lotman)、热拉尔·热内特(Gérard Genette)、让·斯塔 罗宾斯基(Jean Starobinski),发表过罗兰·巴特(Roland Barthes)、列维-施特劳斯(Lévi-Strauss)、雅克·德里达(Jacques Derrida)、保罗·利科 (Paul Ricoeur)等大师的文章"(Cohen, "Notes" A11)。而这仅仅是《新文 学史》创刊的第七年,它便获得如此高的评价。这与科恩从创刊初期就对跨 文化交流与合作的强调密不可分。

《新文学史》强调文化同文化之间的对话,首先表现在刊物顾问编辑的 选择上。通常,一个编辑团队由主编、编委会、学术委员会等若干机构或个 体组成,其作用包括组稿、审稿、发掘培养人才、办刊咨询等1。《新文学史》 的编辑团队下设三个层级,分别为主编、编辑委员会与顾问编辑。这其中对 文学研究的跨文化交流推动作用较大的是顾问编辑。在《新文学史》创刊之 际,顾问编辑共有19位知名学者,其中有10位来自美国,包括伽达默尔在 内有6位来自欧洲,有2位来自前苏联,有1位来自澳大利亚。这些顾问编辑, 除需要为刊物撰写优质文章外,还要推荐一定数量优秀学者的稿件,这也使 得"他们及其同事们的思想开始定期展现在美国学界面前"(Bleich 715)。 纵观该刊的发展历程,经常在该刊发表论文的作者如埃莱娜·西苏 (Hélène Cixous)、伊瑟、姚斯等均曾出任顾问编辑。可以说,该刊的顾问编辑团队 真正架起了美国同其他学界进行沟通的桥梁。对顾问编辑的选择不仅是对优 秀学人的选择,也是对被选择的学者背后整个学术圈的选择。

《新文学史》同样强调期刊编辑部与海外大学或出版社之间的合作, 以促成不同文化之间的对话。这一点主要通过举办会议或通过论文翻译来进 行。就该刊同中国学界的对话而言,《新文学史》于1995年和大连大学举办 过一次学术研讨会。会上的讨论促成了1997年《新文学史》的主题为"文 化研究:中国和西方"("Cultural Studies: China and the West")的诞生。从 2000年开始,该刊的一些经典文章被陆续译成中文,并在我国台湾地区出版

<sup>1</sup> 参见陈朝晖、谢明子:"如何正确发挥科技期刊编委会的作用",《编辑学报》3(2007); 205-206; 陈翔: "学术期刊编委会履行职责中常见问题分析", 《编辑学报》6(2007): 453-454。

发行。2013年起,在新任主编芮塔·费尔斯基(Rita Felski)的推动下,该 刊开始同浙江大学出版社合作,挑选了1995年以后发表的部分优质文章进行 翻译,汇集成册后分别于2013、2015以及2020年出版发行。此外,《新文学 史》还有日语、韩语的译文合辑1。这使得美国及英语国家以外的学者和读者 在全球化的背景下, 也能更好地读到《新文学史》杂志中独具创新性和颇有 影响力的文章。

《新文学史》强调文化同文化之间的对话还体现在刊物同刊物之间的 合作上。在法国,热奈特、茨维坦·托多罗夫(Tzvetan Todorov)等人在 《新文学史》创刊的同一年创办了学术刊物《诗学》。创刊伊始,科恩便同 《诗学》编辑部沟通,让双方可以无偿发表来自对方期刊已刊登的文章的 译文。据科恩回忆,《新文学史》在1974年第六卷第一期刊登了译自《诗 学》(Poétique)杂志德里达的"白色神话:哲学话语中的隐喻"("White Mythology: Metaphor in the Text of Philosophy") 一文; 在1975年第六卷第二期 《叙事与叙事学: I》中刊登了罗兰·巴特、路易·马琳(Louis Marin)、列 维•斯特劳斯等法国学者所发表文章的译文。此外,《诗学》杂志的各位编 辑也为《新文学史》撰稿,这些稿件所做出的贡献为法国批评指明了方向。 《新文学史》和《诗学》可以说是学术刊物之间密切合作的典范。它们既向 对方展示了本方学界最新的研究成果, 也起到了相互启迪的作用。

依托科恩本人的学术声誉,《新文学史》从创刊初期就能向顶尖学者约 稿并发表他们的成果,同时还将各国不同领域的学界中有学术影响力的学者 邀请加入顾问编辑团队,这无疑奠定了该刊坚实的基础,从而能够实现该刊 所瞄准的高水准、高规格和高层次。但作为一本立足于美国的学术期刊,《新 文学史》在引进各国理论时,并非简单地进行翻译和呈现,而是引入了它们 的思维方式以及理论的建构方式:藉由栏目策划等方式,该刊在引介欧洲理 论思想的同时,还大力鼓励本国学者大胆吸收、大胆批判,并与不同文化背 景的学者展开对话,这大大提升了本国学者的理论水平和理论创新水平;引 进来自不同背景的学者们参与该刊顾问编辑团队、与欧洲学术期刊合作、加 强同世界各国出版社的联系等,也为该刊日后产生影响做好组织上的准备。

《新文学史》在办刊理念上寻求期刊同学科之间的对话、编者同学者之 间的对话、学者同学者之间的对话以及文化同文化之间的对话。它"创造了 一个社会空间——一个介于个人观点同意识形态之间的空间。在这里,人们 联合起来寻找新的意义和理解"(Banathy ix)。《新文学史》的成功经验, 在跨学科研究日益繁荣的今天,推动了不同学科、不同领域的研究者以及不 同文化之间的携手合作和共同发展。作为主编,科恩肩负起历史重任,借助

<sup>1</sup> 参见 芮塔•费尔斯基:《新文学史(第1辑)》,陈新策划。杭州:浙江大学出版社, 2013年,第4页。

《新文学史》期刊这个平台,积极创造有利于各方对话的条件,促进各方之 间在真正意义上的对话, 让不同学者、不同学科、不同文化在这里交汇、融合, 达成相互理解、共同促进, 从而推动文学理论研究不断向前发展, 推动文学 这门学科同其他学科不断交叉和融合。

#### **Works Cited**

Arac, Jonathan. "Reckoning with New Literary History." New Literary History 4 (2009): 703-711.

自羽红: "征稿简则的规范化探析", 《编辑学报》5(2009): 401-402。

[Bai Yuhong: "Researching Standardization of 'Instruction for Authors'." Acta Editologica 5 (2009): 401-402.]

Banathy, H. Bela and M. Patrick Jenlink, eds. Dialogue as a Means of Collective Communication. New York: Kluwer Academic Publishers, 2005.

Bleich, David. "New Academic History." New Literary History 4 (2009): 713-717.

Cixous, Hélène and Laurent Milesi, trans. "Tribute to Ralph Cohen." New Literary History 4 (2009): 751-753.

陈翔: "学术期刊编委会履行职责中常见问题分析", 《编辑学报》6(2007): 453-454。

[Chen Xiang: "Analysis of Common Problems in the Performance of the Editorial Board of Academic Journals." Acta Editologica 6 (2007): 453-454.]

陈朝晖、谢明子: "如何正确发挥科技期刊编委会的作用", 《编辑学报》3(2007): 205-206.

[Chen Zhaohui and Xie Mingzi: "How to Bring Sci-tech Journal Editorial Board into Play." Acta Editologica 3 (2007): 205-206.]

Cohen, Ralph. "A Note on New Literary History." New Literary History 1 (1969): 3-6.

- —. "Common Wealth Center for Literary and Cultural Change: Programs 1989-1990." New Literary History 4 (1990): 1062-1071.
- —. "Common Wealth Center for Literary and Cultural Change: Programs 1990-1991." New Literary History 4 (1991): 1105-1113.
- —. "Notes for a History of New Literary History." New Literary History 4 (2009): A1-A28.

Compagnon, Antonie. Literature, Theory and Common Sense. Princeton: Princeton UP, 2004.

Crane, Ronald S. Critical and Historical Principles of Literary History. Chicago: U of Chicago P, 1971.

芮塔•费尔斯基:《新文学史(第1辑)》,陈新策划。杭州:浙江大学出版社,2013年。

[Felski, Rita. New Literary History (Volume 1), Chen Xin (publication planning). Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2013.]

郭游: "试论学术类期刊的视觉形象", 《编辑学报》2(1999): 11-13。

[Guo You: "On Visual Image of Academic Journals." Acta Editologica 2 (1999): 11-13.]

Hard, Robin. The Routledge Handbook of Greek Mythology. London and New York: Routledge, 2004.

Hunter, Gordon. "The Lessons of the Editor." New Literary History 4 (2009): 729-737.

- 刘建明、李永春: "论学术期刊的选题策划", 《理论探讨》4(2002): 93-94。
- [Liu Jianming and Li Yongchun: "On Topic Selection of Academic Journals." Theoretical Investigation 4 (2002): 93-94.]
- 龙协涛: "学术繁荣与期刊主编", 《北京行政学院学报》4(2007): 1-3。
- [Long Xietao: "Academic Prosperity and Academic Journal Editor." Journal of Beijing Administration Institute 4 (2007): 1-3.]
- Nussbaum, Martha C. "Ralph Cohen and the Dialogue between Philosophy and Literature." New Literary History 4 (2009): 757-765.
- 王宁: "永远的拉尔夫•科恩和《新文学史》", 《文学理论前沿》1(2016): 211-218。
- [Wang Ning: "Eternal Glory to Ralph Cohen and New Literary History." Frontiers of Literary Theory 1 (2016): 211-218.]
- Wellek, Rene. "Literary Theory, Criticism and History." The Sewanee Review 1 (1960): 1-19.
- Wellek, René and Austen Warren. Theory of Literature. New York: Harcourt, Brace & World, Inc.,
- Williams, Jeffrey J. "The Rise of the Theory Journal." New Literary History 4 (2009): 683-702.
- 杨革新: "从伦理批评到文学伦理学批评:美国伦理批评的困境与出路",《上海师范大学学报》 (哲学社会科学版)1(2019):50-57。
- [Yang Gexin: "From Ethical Criticism to Ethical Literary Criticism: The Dilemma and Way-Out of American Ethical Criticism." Journal of Shanghai Normal University (Philosophy & Social Sciences Edition) 1 (2019): 50-57.]
- 周启超: "巴赫金'对话论'再释", 《浙江社会科学》9(2021): 122-129+159-160。
- [Zhou Qichao: "Reinterpretation of Bakhtin's Dialogism." Zhejiang Social Sciences 9 (2021): 122-129+159-160.]

# 重组、构建和联结: 丹麦文学史研究新动向 Retooling, Composing and Connecting: New Trends in Research on the History of Danish Literature

# 何 畅 (He Chang)

内容摘要:安一玛丽·麦的新书《丹麦文学:1000-1900》以拉图尔的"行动者网络"思想和利科的叙事学为理论框架,采用新历史主义的方法,以散文和轶事式的叙述风格,将大量种类繁多又鲜为人知的文学文本和历史材料编织在一起,重现了众声喧哗中的丹麦文学史。在这一框架之内,有关作者及其作品的丰富信息互相对话,构成了彼此关联、意蕴深厚的网状历史叙述。该书不仅着力于展现丹麦文学在不同文学时期的成就与贡献,而且也力图彰显其跨媒介性、世界性,以及其性别维度和公共维度。除此之外,麦还致力于用重组、构建和联结的方式实践文学史创作,使其成为将作者、作品和时代联系起来的"流动"的文学史。该著作的创新之处主要体现为作者对丹麦文学独特性和世界性的深入讨论,以及对文学历史编撰学这一文体的突破性尝试。

**关键词:**《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》; 安 - 玛丽 • 麦; 新历史主义; 行动者网络; 文学历史编撰学

**作者简介:** 何畅, 博士, 杭州师范大学外国语学院教授, 主要研究方向为英国文学和世界文学。

**Title:** Retooling, Composing and Connecting: New Trends in Research on the History of Danish Literature

Abstract: Within a theoretical framework combining Bruno Latour's "Actor-Network Theory" and Paul Ricœur's narratology, Anne-Marie Mai's new book Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900 weaves together various literary texts and historical materials that are little known to modern readers through her new-historic style of narration, aiming to recreate the history of Danish literature amid the heteroglossia. On the strength of this framework, the rich information about authors and their works is reorganized into a networked new-historical narration. Mai not only tries to demonstrate the contribution of Danish literature in different literary periods, its features of inter-media and cosmopolitan writing, as well as its gender and public dimension, but also endeavors to describe a flow and connection

between authors, books and ages in a manner which features retooling, composing and connecting. The originality of this book mainly lies in the author's in-depth discussion on the uniqueness and cosmopolitanism of Danish literature and her breakthrough in her attempts to reconceptualize the genre of historiography.

Keywords: Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900; Anne-Marie Mai; Newhistoricism; Actor-Network Theory; historiography

Author: He Chang, Ph.D., is Professor at the School of International Studies, Hangzhou Normal University (Hangzhou 311121, China). Her research interest is British literature and World literature (Email: rabbithc@hotmail.com).

丹麦文学是斯堪的纳维亚文学的一个重要分支, 其版图上不乏像童话 作家安徒生(Hans Christian Andersen)、"北欧莫里哀"霍尔堡(Ludvig Holberg)、"文化传教士"勃兰兑斯(Georg Brandes)、诺贝尔文学奖得 主彭托皮丹(Henrik Pontoppidan)、盖勒鲁普(Karl Adolph Gjellerup)和 延森(Johannes Vilhelm Jensen)这些家喻户晓的文学大师。近年来国际学界 不断将目光投向丹麦文学,但关注点仍停留于个别知名作家,或局限于现、 当代丹麦文学。因此, 梳理丹麦文学的整体发展轨迹迫在眉睫。继米切尔 (P. M. Mitchell) 编著的《丹麦文学的群星》 (A History of Danish Literature, 1971)、罗塞尔 (Sven Hakon Rossel) 编纂的《丹麦文学史》 (A History of Danish Literature, 1992), 及林高(Dan Ringgaard)和汤姆森(Mads Rosendahl Thomsen) 主编的《作为世界文学的丹麦文学》(Danish Literature as World Literature, 2017) 之后,杰出的丹麦文学批评家、历史学家安-玛 丽·麦(Anne-Marie Mai)的新书《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》(Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900) 为丹麦文学史的梳理,尤其是对其早期发展脉络的整理, 作出了最新的贡献。

麦的新书《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》视野开阔,别出机杼。纵览全书,作 者以布鲁诺(Bruno Latour)的"行动者网络"(Actor-Network Theory)思想 和利科(Paul Ricœur)的叙事学为理论框架,采用新历史主义的方法,以散文 和轶事式的叙述风格,将大量种类繁多又鲜为人知的文学文本和历史材料编织 在一起。在这一框架之内,有关作者及其作品的丰富信息互相对话,构成了彼 此关联、意蕴深厚的网状历史叙述。该书虽以丹麦语文学为重点,但突破了狭 隘的民族文学边界,以整个欧洲为背景进行跨民族和跨文化书写。可以说,该 书不仅着力于展现丹麦文学在不同文学时期(包括前历史时期、中世纪、文艺 复兴、古典主义时期、浪漫主义时期和现代主义时期等)的成就与贡献,而且 也力图展现其跨媒介性、世界性,以及它的性别维度和公共维度。除此之外,

麦致力于用"重组、构建和联结的方式实践文学史创作"(12)<sup>1</sup>,使其成为 将作者、作品和时代联系起来的"流动"文学史。因此,该书的创新之处不仅 表现为作者对丹麦文学独特性和世界性的深入讨论,还体现在作者对文学历史 编撰学(historiography)这一文体的突破性尝试之中。

## 一、多元与互释: 众声喧哗中的丹麦文学史

安-玛丽·麦以纵向的文学史分期为经线,以具体的文学文本和历史语 境为纬线,致力于描绘一幅众声喧哗,却又不失整体性的丹麦文学画卷。 该书的整体性首先体现在作者的主题式分期方式之上。按照不同的主题,麦 在时间纵轴上划分出三个历史阶段,从宏观层面连贯地呈现了丹麦文学在 1000年至1900年之间的发展脉络。这三个阶段分别是"1000-1700:从神的时 代到人的时代" (from God's time to man's time), "1700-1800: 启蒙的世 纪"(the century of Enlightenment)和"1800-1900: 憧憬的世纪"(the age of longings)。具体而言,在第一阶段,神学和宗教文学逐渐被世俗文学取 代, "人"成为被书写的对象: 第二阶段见证了丹麦现代文学的兴起, 这一 趋势以席卷欧洲的启蒙文化对丹麦文学的深刻影响作为标志; 第三阶段的主 题则是"憧憬": 富于想象的丹麦现代主义文学既蕴含着对自由的超时空的 憧憬,同时这股乐观情绪又被现实的挫败感和失落感所笼罩。这三个阶段都 以"人"为主题——第一阶段紧扣"人"的诞生,第二阶段紧扣"人"的启 蒙,而第三阶段则紧扣"人"的憧憬。三个阶段彼此呼应,互为关联,在流 动的文学史中展现"具有历史感的人"。显而易见,麦所采纳的主题式分期 方式有别于传统文学史的编纂方式。关于后者, 韦勒克曾如此批判: "大多 数文学史著作, 要么是社会史, 要么是文学作品所阐述的思想史, 要么只是 对那些按编年顺序加以排列的具体文学作品的印象和评价"(韦勒克 沃仁 292)。换言之,按传统方式编纂的文学史,或关注线性的历史,或堆砌、罗 列文学作品,往往忽略了历史中的人及其发展的连续性。从这一视角来看, 《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》无疑跳出了这一窠臼,转向对人和文学的整体性发 展规律的探索,不失为具有人文主义关怀的文学史著作。

在上述纵轴之上,麦力图展示各时期内部不同文学思潮、文学概念的 交织和互动,冲突和抵牾,以此呈现一部多元的、复数的丹麦文学史。以19 世纪的浪漫主义(Romanticism)为例。在作者看来,浪漫主义是一个动态 的、变化的、复合的概念,它的边界"含糊"(murky)而难以被"程式化" (schematic) (145-149)。然而,如果因此就将这一时期简化成对欧伦施 莱厄(Adam Gottlob Oehlenschläger)、斯蒂芬斯(Henrik Steffens)等个别 文学巨擘的关注,那必将减损丹麦浪漫主义文学的整体生命力,进而导致读

<sup>1</sup> 本文相关引文均出自 Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022。下文仅标注页码,不再一一说明。

者认知上的缺失。为了避免上述现象,麦带领读者回到了这段熠熠生辉的文 学黄金时期, 在抽丝剥茧的叙述中呈现了盘根错节、枝蔓横生的丹麦浪漫主 义文学景观:在19世纪丹麦文学领域,感伤主义、德国浪漫主义、成长小说 (Bildung-literature)、民族浪漫主义(national Romanticism)、彼得麦耶尔 时期文学(Biedermeier literature)和激进浪漫主义(radical Romanticism)先 后登场,它们或前赴后继,或协手共进,推动了丹麦浪漫主义文学的三次代 际传承,并形塑了其内部的丰富肌理和层次。 除此以外,在讨论18世纪丹麦 文学时,麦还揭示了启蒙的拼贴性和多面性,以及古典主义在丹麦引发的多 种文学趋势。可以说,《丹麦文学:1000-1900》是一部拒绝单一化和片面化 叙事的复调式文学史。

在横向维度上,文学文本与历史语境的共时性互释同样凸显了麦对整 体性的强调。根据新历史主义理论,文学与历史之间不存在"前景"与"背 景"的关系, "文本的历史性" (historicity of texts) 与"历史的文学性" (textuality of history) 同举并重。<sup>2</sup>用作者的话来说,我们既能"以历史关 照文学文本,也可用文学文本阐释历史"(8),文学研究的对象不能局限 于狭义的文学文本,而应拓展至包含历史文献、文化符码等在内的广义文化 文本。正因为如此,麦不时穿梭于文学文本与掌故、轶事之间,以广博的视 野将散逸、孤立的众多材料重新编织成一副精妙绝伦而又引人入胜的文学全 景图。例如,麦提到,中国读者熟知的丹麦作家安徒生在1867年深受牙疼 困扰,随后他以此为素材创作了童话故事《牙痛姑妈》("Tante Tandpine", 1872) 3。读者读到此处,想必也忍俊不禁。另一个例子与17世纪的丹麦女 作家勒奥诺拉·克里斯蒂娜(Leonora Christina)有关。克里斯蒂娜是丹麦国 王克里斯蒂安四世的女儿,国王死后,她作为政治犯被监禁了20余年。出狱 后,她创作《回忆录》(Jammers Minde)记录狱中生活。读者历来认为, 《回忆录》"令人信服"(78)地记录了克里斯蒂安四世过世后的丹麦政治 权力斗争,但是麦却指出了该作品虚实相杂的文学特性。例如,克里斯蒂娜 在自传中精心设计了夹杂低地德语、高地德语、法语、丹麦语的对话,将自 己塑造成精通多门语言、善于外交斡旋的女政治家形象,而其政敌要么不懂 外语,要么只会使用"简短的、磕磕巴巴的"(79)的丹麦语,难免相形见 绌。不仅如此,她为了证明自己在狱中的健全心智,对外宣称这部作品大部 分在监禁期间完成,从而巧妙地将现实中的斗争失利转化为"对政敌的精神 和道德胜利"(80)。在麦的分析之下,这部《回忆录》既是引人入胜的文

<sup>1</sup> See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 148.

<sup>2</sup> 参见 陈榕: "新历史主义",《西方文论关键词》,赵一凡等主编,北京:外语教学与研 究出版社,2006年,第670-673页。

<sup>3</sup> See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 141.

学虚构作品,又是克里斯蒂娜留待后人评判的史料。文本与历史层层交织, 环环相扣,于无形中印证了雷蒙•威廉斯的观点,即艺术作品和历史不是互 证关系,而是持续地相互塑造的关系(qtd. in Montrose 396)。

该书的整体性还体现在麦对边缘化声音的关注之上。以克里斯蒂娜为代 表的女性作家群体是作者着墨较多的对象之一。如麦在前言所述,"与罗塞 尔编纂的《丹麦文学史》相比,本书在对早期文学和当代文学的介绍中均增 加了更多女性作家"(10),从而有效地扩大了丹麦文学的疆界。以启蒙时 期为例, 麦突破性地将多萝西娅·比尔(Charlotta Dorothea Biehl)与霍尔 堡、埃瓦尔(Johannes Ewald)等男性文学巨匠比肩,认为他/她们均通过 书写参与了对公众的启蒙和对公共精神的塑造:同时麦又指出,女性读者极 大地受益于这场文化运动,丹麦语剧院便是当时女性观众获得启蒙的重要场 所。除了女性作家以外,在传统文学史中多被忽视的教师作家(school-teacher authors) 群体也被纳入本书的研究范畴。正如陈榕所说,新历史主义"致力 于恢复被主流话语所掩盖的边缘性声音和被主流历史忽视的边缘性文本" (680),而这显然也是麦编纂《丹麦文学:1000-1900》的重要意义所在。

《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》展现了安-玛丽•麦深厚的文学底蕴和广阔的 文学视野。她无意于以文学和文学家的冗长名单为历史作注。有鉴于此,她摒 弃了法国古典主义批评家圣伯夫(Charles Sainte-Beuve)<sup>1</sup>式的批评理念,选择 了一种更注重历史内在纹理的新历史主义书写方式,力求在文学和历史的碰撞 中呈现丹麦文学的多元面貌。实际上,这种历史书写方式也是一种"叙事", 具有形塑时间的功能。根据利科的观点,读者只有借助于叙事,才能经验性地 理解抽象化的时间和发生在遥远历史中的种种事件。2简而言之,安-玛丽•麦 以利科的叙事学为指导,通过充满感性经验和生命体悟的叙事来重现众声喧哗 中的丹麦文学史,并激发起当代读者对丹麦文学多彩历史的热情。

#### 二、联结与重塑:网状联结中的丹麦文学史

在《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》一书中, 安-玛丽•麦对文学史的描述呈现 出独特的网状结构(network)。这种网状系统犹如欣欣向荣的树木,抽枝散 叶,枝桠交错。而在这个联结不同时代的网络系统中,作者、读者、出版商、 图书馆管理员、沟通者、研究人员,甚至空间、书籍和手稿,都犹如法国著 名社会学家、人类学家布鲁诺·拉图尔所说的"行动者"(actor),跨越不 同时空,彼此参照,交相辉映。在拉图尔的"行动者网络"概念中,"行动 者"可以指人,也可以指非人的存在和力量。"行动者"之间关系是不确定

<sup>1</sup> 圣伯夫是法国 19 世纪文学批评的代表人物,以肖像式批评方法(oeuvre portraits)著称。他 称自己是"为伟大人物画肖像的人,一个描绘性格的人。"参见刘晖,"从圣伯夫出发——普 鲁斯特驳圣伯夫之考证",《外国文学评论》1(2008):5。

<sup>2</sup> See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 9.

的,每一个行动者就是一个结点(knot),结点之间彼此平等,相互影响,并 在相互关联中重塑彼此。深受拉图尔理论的启发, 麦放弃了将历史装在"盒 子"里的断代史研究方法,力图描绘出一种"流动"中的文学史。正是在流动 中,作者、作品以及时代互相联结,彼此改变。也正是在上述流动中,历史本 身在不同"行动者"的互相作用下,不断形塑并重塑自我。为了进一步说明 其研究方法,作者引用了菲尔斯基(Rita Felski)在《批评的局限》(Limits of Critique, 2015)中的一段话: "文本拒绝被拘禁在容器中,它积极地跨越空间 和时间,以既可预测又令人困惑的方式与其他因素相联系〔……〕文学文本不 是博物馆展厅玻璃后静默的展品,而是在交流(流动)中积极活跃的参与者" (182)。在上述研究方法的指引下,该书在"流动"中展现了丹麦文学与欧 洲其他国家、民族之间的联结,文本、建筑、音乐等媒介之间的联结,以及日 益形成的公共领域中读者与作者之间的联结。

丹麦文学的跨民族和跨文化特征由其特殊的地理环境和语言环境形成。丹 麦位于北海与波罗的海的交汇处,它南接德国,北近挪威,东临瑞典,是斯堪 的纳维亚通向欧洲大陆的桥梁。其次,丹麦语属于印欧语系中的日耳曼语系北 支,与挪威语、瑞典语非常接近,在斯堪的纳维亚地区几乎通行无阻。学者刘 麟还指出,丹麦语在漫长的发展过程中,"大量吸收了拉丁文以及希腊、德、 荷、意、英等国的语汇"(刘麟 2)。因此,从最早的丹麦诗人萨克索(Saxo Grammaticus)到20世纪初的现代诗人克劳森(Sophus Claussen),丹麦文学 体现出强烈的跨民族和跨文化写作的特点,而这一点也是《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》一书的聚焦所在。从文学史评述到对单个作家的分析,麦始终强调丹 麦文学创作是一种世界性写作(cosmopolitan writing)。例如,她指出第一代 丹麦浪漫主义诗人的创作实际上得益于英国、法国和德国启蒙文学的影响。 具体来说,丹麦诗人埃瓦尔(Johannes Ewald)和巴格森(Jens Baggesen)都 借鉴了英国作家斯特恩(Laurence Sterne)、杨格(Edward Young)、法国哲 学家卢梭(Jean-Jacques Rousseau)和德国感伤派诗人克洛卜施托克(Friedrich Gottlieb Klopstock)的创作手法和理念。<sup>1</sup>而欧伦施莱厄的《黄金号角》("The Golden Horns")则得益于诗人和挪威自然科学家、哲学家斯蒂芬斯(Henrich Steffens)长达16小时的对谈。有意思的是,斯蒂芬斯与德国浪漫主义思想渊 源深厚。1802年,他在德国耶拿逗留时,与当时德国理想主义和浪漫主义代 表人物费希特(Johanna Gottlieb Fichte)、谢林(Friedrich Wilhelm Joseph von Schelling)和歌德(Johanna Wolfgang von Goethe)都有来往,因此可以说,德 国浪漫主义思想"借道"挪威,和挪威哲学思想一起成为丹麦浪漫主义文学 的思想来源之一。在麦看来,这种文明与文化互鉴的传统与趋势造就了丹麦 作家开阔的全球视野和世界公民的心态。尤其在19世纪中后期当丹麦步入全球

See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 145.

化进程以来,丹麦作家和他们笔下的人物、场景和主题都体现出强烈的"世界 性"。例如,在戈尔施米特(M.A. Goldschmidt)享有盛誉的的成长小说《无 家可归》(Homeless)中,主人公奥托的成长与他在丹麦以及欧洲的自我放逐 和游历不无关系。同样,丹麦文学批评家勃兰兑斯的演讲、游记和为欧洲杂志 所撰写的评论让他在欧洲获得了广泛声誉。一言以蔽之, 丹麦的文学家"大都 认为自己是国际文学共和国的成员"(菲·马·米切尔 82),因此,他们的 创作是以那些不受国家局限的学者和读者为目标对象的。

对丹麦文学跨媒介特点的凸显也是《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》一书的创新 所在。麦试图以跨媒介性研究(inter-media)为视角,用多媒介融合的方法展 现立体的丹麦文学景观。这集中体现在两个方面。其一、对文本对象的跨媒 介展现。比如,在讨论古丹麦文学时,作者指出,鲁纳铭文不仅出现在古代 剑鞘上,还出现在石碑、船棺和碑书这些其他媒介之上,以符号的形式激发 人们对那个魔幻时代的视觉记忆。作者尤其详细介绍了耶拿碑书(the Jelling Stone),它由两块符文石构成,形如一本打开的书,由公元十世纪的丹麦 国王哈罗德·蓝牙王和其父亲在不同时代建立。在蓝牙王建的石碑上,铭文 符号与狮形、蛇形图案交错、联结,述说着蓝牙王统一丹麦和挪威,并将丹 麦带入基督教时代的丰功伟绩。麦还指出,古丹麦时代的这些鲁纳铭文往往 具有音乐感,很多"有意使用了古斯堪的纳维亚语的韵律,词序,重复,头 韵和常见于古日耳曼诗歌中的加重音"(27)。可见,在该作者笔下,鲁纳 铭文是文字、符号、图像及音乐交织的文学形式。同样,在丹麦中世纪文 学中,这种不同媒介间的互文性集中体现在教堂建筑、经文和羊皮卷手稿 (parchment)中。例如,在公元1300年的《鲁尼法典》(Codex Runicus) 中,鲁纳文、拉丁文和乐谱在羊皮卷中共同出现。该乐谱来自古代北欧民 谣,大意为:"昨夜,真丝、织锦入梦来"(37)。真丝与织锦既代表世俗 的享受,也代表柔软的触感。可以说,在长达101页的《鲁尼法典》中,文 字、符号和乐符互相指涉,以视觉、听觉和触觉共存的方式再现了丹麦中 世纪时期魔幻性、宗教性和世俗性交融的历史语境。又比如,受公元8世纪 加洛林帝国(Carolingian Empire)的影响,丹麦教堂里的壁画通常以文字与 绘画结合的方式来展现圣经故事。除此之外,流行于15世纪丹麦的图片圣经 (picture bible) 更是用木刻版画的形式来达到宗教启迪和伦理教诲的作用。 在被称为《穷人圣经》(Biblical Pauperum)的木刻版画中,拉丁文经文、丹 麦文释经和插画共同占据了页面,形成了图文并茂的效果。有鉴于此,麦称 中世纪丹麦文学是"符号的世界"(51),并建议任何对中世纪丹麦文学感 兴趣的人都不应忽视该时期的建筑、宗教仪式和视觉艺术形式。其二、对文 学史的跨媒介展现。全书共有配图54张,照片内容包罗万象,大到文学家的 雕塑、纪念碑、故居、博物馆、教堂、人文自然景观、戏剧的舞台呈现,小 到棺木、乐谱字符、壁画、十字绣, 甚至作家使用过的墨水瓶。这些档案、

文献以及遗迹照片以跨媒介的形式构建了利科所谓的"历史叙事"。利科认 为, "历史叙事"可以连接固定不变的、直线的、具有客观性的宇宙时间和 转瞬即逝的、流动的、具有主观性的经验时间。因此,这54张有关档案、文 献以及遗迹的照片一方面再现了存在于确定、真实的宇宙时间之中的丹麦历 史,另一方面又通过各种媒介复原了活生生的丹麦人在经验时间中留下的生 活痕迹和生命印记。可以说, 跨媒介视角中的历史叙事使该书成为一本有温 度、有情感的文学史。

还值得一提的是,《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》一书在构建文学史的同时, 始终强调读者的在场以及读者和作者之间的联结。在谈及丹麦18世纪启蒙 作家霍尔堡(Ludvig Holberg)时,麦指出,如何培养具有阅读能力的"公 众",并形成自由交换意见的公共领域(public forum)是霍尔堡写作的目 的所在。1自1744之后,霍尔堡开始仿效旨在改良社会道德的英国期刊《旁 观者》(The Spectator),并发表了伦理哲学随笔集——《伦理观念》。事 实上,除霍尔堡以外,丹麦作家斯尼佐尔夫(Jens Schielderup Sneedorff)创 办的"品味俱乐部"(The Tasting Society)和丹麦语杂志《爱国的旁观者》 (The Patriotic Spectator)都试图引领丹麦中产阶级读者的文学趣味,并以文 学培育的形式重塑读者的伦理道德标准。应该说,对公众(publico)和公共 领域的关注一方面彰显了丹麦作家对启蒙理性的向往,另一方面则充分体现 了他们融入欧洲启蒙运动的意愿。麦认为,尤其在丹麦国王克里斯蒂安七世 执政之后,丹麦率先成为欧洲第一个获得出版自由的国家,并因此进一步推 动了公共领域的建构。2从1770-1772年间,丹麦首都哥本哈根如英国作家艾 迪生笔下的伦敦街头一样,咖啡馆林立,成为大大小小文人俱乐部的场所所 在。正是在这些俱乐部中, 丹麦作家针砭时弊, 引领公共对话和讨论, 培养 了大量像黑贝尔格(P. A. Heiberg)这样的政治批评家。值得一提的是,麦在 讨论丹麦文学与"公众"这一话题时,充分展现女性的存在。她谈到,受法 国文化的影响,丹麦女性往往以举办沙龙的形式介入18世纪公共空间。这当 中, 尤以女诗人布伦 (Friederike Brun) 和拉贝克 (Kamma Rahbek) 的沙龙 最为知名,正是在后者的沙龙中,外省青年安徒生在文人聚会首次出场。

综上所述,《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》一书从未将文学文本视作静默的博 物馆展品,相反,它极具开放性和包容性,是一部"网状"的文学史。安-玛丽•麦 教授试图指出,正是在这些相关术语、作品、作家、地点以及社交网络的共 同作用之下,丹麦文学得以滥觞,并在流动中不断构建并重塑自我。这种鲜

See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 107.

See Anne-Marie Mai, Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons, Odense: University Press of Southern Denmark, 2022, 114.

活生动又不失精确的文学史写作方式不免让人想起前文提到的著名文学批评 家勃兰兑斯,后者的《十九世纪文学主流》迄今仍是研究欧洲文学史的里程 碑式著作。勃氏曾这样写道:"一本书,如果单纯从美学的观点看,它只是 一件艺术品,是一个独自存在的完备的整体,和周围的世界没有任何联系。 但如果从历史的观点看,尽管一本书是一件完美、完整的艺术品,它却只是 从无边无际的一张网上剪下来的一小块"(2)。和勃氏一样, 麦以广阔的视 野来审视丹麦文学,并使其总体性特征在各类术语、作品、作家、地点以及 社会政治、宗教等因素的交汇和博弈中凸显出来。与此同时,她又以新历史 主义的叙事方法,通过透视一个人物、一个时间点乃至一个时间段来把握一 个时代的整体精神。对于中国学者而言,《丹麦文学: 1000-1900》也为我们 书写文学史提供了有益的借鉴。

#### **Works Cited**

勃兰兑斯:《十九世纪文学主流》,张道真译。北京:人民文学出版社,1980年。

[Brandes, Georg. Main Currents in Nineteenth Century Literature, translated by Zhang Daozhen et al. Beijing: People's Literature Publishing House, 1980.]

陈榕: "新历史主义",《西方文论关键词》,赵一凡等主编。北京:外语教学与研究出版社, 2006年, 第670-681页。

[Chen Rong. "New Historicism." Keywords of Western Literary Theory, edited by Zhao Yifan et al. Beijing: Foreign Language Teaching and Research Press, 2006. 670-681.]

Felski, Rita. Limits of Critique. Chicago: Chicago UP, 2015.

刘晖: "从圣伯夫出发——普鲁斯特驳圣伯夫之考证", 《外国文学评论》1 (2008): 5-19。

[Liu Hui. "Starting from Sainte-Beuve: A Review of Marcel Proust's Critique of Sainte-Beuve." Foreign Literature Review 1 (2008): 5-19.]

刘麟: "开放的文学,宽容的文学——中译本序",《丹麦文学的群星》,菲·马·米切尔著, 阮坤等译。沈阳:辽宁教育出版社,2013年。

[Liu Lin. "Open Literature, Tolerant Literature: Preface to Chinese translation." A History of Danish Literature. P. M. Mitchell. Translated by Ruan Kun et al. Shenyang: Liaoning Education Press, 2013.]

Mai, Anne-Marie. Danish Literature from 1000 to 1900, translated by John Irons. Odense: UP of Southern Denmark, 2022.

菲·马·米切尔:《丹麦文学的群星》,阮坤等译。沈阳:辽宁教育出版社,2013年。

[Mitchell, P. M. A History of Danish Literature, translated by Ruan Kun et al. Shenyang: Liaoning Education Press, 2013.]

Montrose, Louis. Redrawing the Boundaries: The Transformation of English and American Literary Studies. Beijing: Foreign Language Teaching and Researching Press, 2007.

勒内·韦勒克、奥斯汀·沃伦:《文学理论》,刘象愚等译。北京:文化艺术出版社,2010年。

[Wellek, René and Austin Warren. Theory of Literature, translated by Liu Xiangyu et al. Beijing: Culture and Art Press, 2010.]

英国流散叙事中的殖民主义"脑文本":评《现当代英国流散文学研究》

# Colonial "Brain Text" in British Diaspora Narrative: A Review of *Modern and Contemporary British* Diaspora Literature Studies

# 方 圆 (Fang Yuan)

内容摘要: 徐彬在专著《现当代英国流散文学研究》中提出了殖民主义"脑文本"这一概念,探讨了现当代英国流散作家们对殖民主义"脑文本"固化的焦虑以及抵抗这种"脑文本"的有效途径,揭示了现当代英国流散文学与英国殖民文化霸权间的内在逻辑关系。该书采用了跨学科的研究方法,凸显了问题意识和创新意识,揭示了英国流散文学研究的走势和趋向,有助于我国流散文学研究的进一步拓展。

关键词:《现当代英国流散文学研究》;殖民主义"脑文本";殖民文化霸权作者简介:方圆,文学博士,浙江理工大学外国语学院讲师,主要研究方向为美国非裔文学。本文为浙江省社科规划课题"20世纪美国非裔小说中的黑人家庭伦理研究"【项目批号:21NDQN233YB】的阶段性成果。

**Title:** Colonial "Brain Text" in British Diaspora Narrative: A Review of *Modern* and Contemporary British Diaspora Literature Studies

Abstract: Professor Xu Bin puts forward the concept of colonial "brain text" in his monograph *Modern and Contemporary British Diaspora Literature Studies*. It has explored the anxiety of modern and contemporary British diaspora writers about the solidification of colonial "brain text" as well as effective ways to resist this "brain text", and has revealed the internal logical relationship between modern and contemporary British diaspora literature and the hegemony of British colonial culture. The book adopts interdisciplinary research methods, highlights the awareness of problems and innovation, reveals the trend of British diaspora literature research, and contributes to the further development of diaspora literature research in China.

**Keywords:** *Modern and Contemporary British Diaspora Literature Studies*; colonial "brain text"; the hegemony of British colonial culture

Author: Fang Yuan is Lecturer at School of Foreign Language Studies, Zhejiang Sci-tech University (Hangzhou 310018, China). Her research interest is African American literature (Email: nancyfang@zstu.edu.cn).

不同的流散族群因其历史成因和地理空间的不同,产生的流散文学有着 自己特殊的流散谱系和文化风格。徐彬在其专著《从鲁德亚德•吉卜林到扎 迪•史密斯:现当代英国流散文学研究》中对19世纪晚期至21世纪初期的英国 流散文学中的双向流散、流散伦理、后殖民重写等问题进行了系统的阐释, 对多元文化语境下的英国流散文学的特征进行了总结和梳理。

聂珍钊教授认为"脑文本是存储在人的大脑中的记忆",在文字出现之 后,"脑文本才能够被记录和保存"(17)。《现当代英国流散文学研究》 以聂珍钊教授的"脑文本"概念为基础,提出了殖民主义"脑文本"这一概 念,即"在殖民主义政治经济和历史文化影响下,对殖民与被殖民经验和与 之相关的殖民伦理的认同与记忆"(徐彬 255-256)。书中明确指出,现当 代英国流散作家与殖民主义"脑文本"之间存在"反映""共谋"和"抵 抗"三种关系。长期的殖民历史让殖民伦理得到集体无意识的认同,内化到 殖民者和被殖民者的自我意识中。徐彬认为这种习得与承认殖民主义"脑文 本"是一种生存手段和身份认同方式。但很多后殖民作家已经意识到对殖民 主义"脑文本"无条件认同的危害性,并对英国经典文学作品进行后殖民主 义重写,消解殖民主义文化霸权。

这本专著将英国流散文学分为两种:一是移民殖民地的英国人及其后代 的创作,二是来自(前)英国殖民地的有色移民及其后代的文学创作。第一 种属于朱振武教授提及的"殖民流散",殖民者及其后代"由于其殖民书写 和殖民地瓦解之后对帝国往昔的复杂情结而表现出与第三世界的流散相似又 相异的文化和心理"(朱振武 148)。20 世纪初,数以万计的英国人在政府 的号召下移居殖民地。他们一方面将在殖民地建设帝国视为自己义不容辞的 责任,另一方面又对自身的英国国民身份产生了一定的焦虑感,对英国殖民 政治的正当性产生了怀疑。因此,这些殖民地上的英国流散作家们对英国殖 民政治进行了伦理批判,表达了建立跨种族共同体的希冀;但由于殖民思想 潜移默化的影响,作家们也无法跳出个人的思想局限性,他们笔下这种跨种 族共同体的建立常常会困难重重并最终幻灭。第二种则属于异邦流散者,他 们通过地理迁移从第三世界迁移到第一世界,面临跨文化语境下异质文化之 间的冲突和融合。二战后,包括 V. S. 奈保尔(V. S. Naipaul)、萨曼·拉什迪 (Salman Rushdie)、哈尼夫·库雷西 (Hanif Kureishi) 和扎迪·史密斯 (Zadie Smith) 等人在内的来自(前)英国殖民地的英国族裔流散作家加入了英国文 学的版图,给英国本土文学带来多元文化的冲击,实现了一种种族和文化的

杂合。更重要的是,他们关注殖民遗产和帝国文化遗产对独立后的殖民地人 民精神上带来的影响,对英国殖民史进行了反思和批判。不管是流散于英国 殖民地和流散于英国社会的有色移民,他们都在英国国家身份的构建中发挥 了不可或缺的作用。

《现当代英国流散文学研究》涉及对诸多种族和跨种族背景的英国现当 代流散作家、作品的研究,探讨了作家们对于殖民主义"脑文本"固化的焦 虑和抵抗这种"脑文本"的有效途径。研究内容聚焦于以下五点:

- 一、英国本土作家"东方想象"的缘起与现当代英国流散作家"帝国想 象"的构建。长期以来,英国本土作家凭借对殖民地尤其是东方"他者"的凝 视、想象和挪用为大英帝国的崛起奠定了坚实的文化基础,并在此基础上塑造 了英国国家身份。从文艺复兴到19世纪维多利亚现实主义文学,英国本土作家 通过对东方他者形象的刻画,塑造了强大而正义的商业帝国形象。20世纪初, 在大批英国人响应政府号召移居殖民地以后,以约瑟夫•鲁德亚德•吉卜林 (Joseph Rudyard Kipling)和劳伦斯·达累尔(Lawrence Durrell)等为代表的 英国殖民地流散作家则担任了帝国神话创造者和殖民地移民广告宣传的角色, 在文学创作上塑造了维护大英帝国秩序、投身殖民事业的"帝国绅士"和"帝 国淑女"形象。
- 二、英国流散作家创作对特定时期英国殖民政治和殖民主义"脑文本"毒 害的揭示作用。现当代英国流散作家的创作主题多样,但对殖民历史和后殖民 现实的伦理道德批判是一个永恒的主题。作家们在流散叙事中批判了殖民者的 暴行、对黑奴贸易史的屏蔽和篡改、英国社会种族歧视的道德景观、英国上层 阶级将英国百姓卷入帝国殖民事业的欺骗行径、英国多元文化背后对异质文化 的排斥等。殖民政治使得殖民者和被殖民者之间尊卑贵贱的种族伦理关系成为 内化于心的殖民主义"脑文本",而这种殖民主义"脑文本"的固化对种族社 会秩序、社会文化和经济发展遗患无穷。为了实现对殖民主义"脑文本"的后 殖民颠覆,一些当代英国族裔流散作家们尝试对经典英国文学作品进行创造性 的误读和改写。"从V. S.奈保尔到卡里尔·菲利普斯, 当代英国流散作家对以 英国文学经典为表征的帝国文化霸权的态度经历了从无条件臣服到批判性回写 的转变"(徐彬 124)。在反观殖民历史的同时,他们在作品中也深刻揭示了 去殖民地化后的殖民主义"脑文本"的遗毒。这种遗毒一方面对第三世界国家 的民族自信心的建立产生了不良的影响,另一方面也带来前殖民宗主国政治和 文化生活上的伦理失范。
- 三、英国殖民政治宣传与作家艺术创作之间的共谋与对立关系。在移民、 建设和保护殖民地的政治宣传下,定居于英国海外殖民地的流散作家被置于 帝国殖民政治机器上,享有英国殖民统治者的优越性,背负维护大英帝国秩 序的使命感。但与此同时他们通过对殖民地生活现实的观察,对大英帝国的 殖民伦理道德观和英国殖民教育输入的殖民主义"脑文本"提出了质疑。他

们有"反抗"帝国主义和重写殖民主义"脑文本"之意,却出于对既得利益 的考虑又不得不与文化帝国主义"共谋"。是选择与殖民政治"共谋",还 是反抗帝国主义,流散个体陷入了一种伦理两难。所以他们的作品中含有认 同和反抗殖民主义"脑文本"的彼此矛盾对立的心理机制。

四、黑人流散与白人流散之间的共生关系以及构建跨种族命运共同体的 可能性。流散者不仅是来自前英国殖民地的移民,还包括以英国作家达累尔 为代表的出生于前英国殖民地的英国殖民者的后裔。殖民政治让白人和黑人 互为"自我"与"他者",具有了相似的流散经历和身份认同焦虑。殖民政 治和殖民遗产给黑人流散者和白人流散者都带来了一定的心理创伤,让前殖 民者和前被殖民者的后代均成为后殖民精神疾病的受害者。正因为有着相似 的受难经历,白人流散者与非洲土著居民之间、在白人社会被边缘化的黑人 和在父权社会处于边缘地位的白人女性之间存在建立和谐共处的跨民族命运 共同体的可能性。但英国殖民政治宣传的为帝国事业而努力奋斗的"工作伦理" 与流散作家们和殖民地居民之间跨种族的友谊相冲突,殖民主义强权政治和 根深蒂固的殖民主义"脑文本"让这种共同体想象破灭。在莱辛等多位作家 的作品中都能找到这种跨种族命运共同体想象破灭的文学表征。

五、英国有色移民的种族危机以及英国多元文化表象下的种族主义。二 战后,大量有色移民进入英国,有色移民和其后代在度过早期的生存危机之 后,还面临着如何延续种族文化与历史的历史存续危机。在这种多文化的语 境下,如何将种族文化和种族历史传统传承和发展下来成为有色移民作家的 关注点。作家们在作品中通过自身的文化流散体验,探讨了有色移民及其后 代如何通过不同的文化策略融入英国社会以及如何实现文化和历史的传承, 从而引发读者对于英国多元文化的思考。多元文化并不意味着种族主义和殖 民主义"脑文本"影响的消失,当代英国族裔流散作家笔下的英国仍然深受 殖民主义"脑文本"的遗毒影响,充满了不同文化之间的杂合和矛盾冲突。

《现当代英国流散文学研究》采用了跨学科的研究方法,这种跨学科研 究体系的构建对相关学术领域的研究有较高的借鉴价值。在文学的历史、政 治和文化研究基础上,该书引入了社会语言学(政治文化表征语言学层面上 的探讨)、政治经济学和文学伦理学批评等研究方法。该书社会语言学的研 究方法是在定量研究与定性分析特定社会因素对现当代英国流散文学语言及 创作风格影响的基础上,考察相关流散作家"言语行为"的文内意义与文外 指涉。除使用法农(Frantz Omar Fanon)、萨义德(Edward Waefie Said)、霍米• 巴巴(Homi K. Bhabha)和斯皮瓦克(Gayatri C. Spivak)等人的经典后殖民 批评理论和斯图亚特·霍尔(Stuart Hall)的当代文化批评理论之外,该书引 入了社会学与马克思主义政治经济学的相关理论概念与术语,透过现当代英 国流散文学揭示帝国文化霸权是如何建构与运行殖民主义"脑文本"的。

《现当代英国流散文学研究》突破国内外现有旅行文学、族裔文学现

象与作家创作动机阐释的局限,在对旅行文学与流散文学、流散文学与族裔 文学等概念区分的基础上,揭示现当代英国流散文学与英国殖民文化霸权间 的内在逻辑关系。在分析归纳英国文艺复兴、新古典主义和浪漫主义时期英 国文人"东方想象"核心元素和现当代英国流散文学中"帝国想象"核心元 素的基础上,该专著力图绘制英国殖民文化霸权的文学知识谱系图,对现有 英国殖民文学、文化研究将起到整合与提升的作用。书中对殖民主义"脑文 本"和"大英帝国文化霸权生成与延拓机制"等论题的探讨将为现有后殖民 文学研究提供理论话语体系和实证参考。殖民主义"脑文本"这一概念的提 出,强调了殖民伦理在现当代英国流散文学的缘起和发展中的重要性,揭示 了英国流散文学研究的走势和趋向。

由于篇幅的限制,《现当代英国流散文学研究》仅选取了10位现当代英 国流散作家的作品进行了研究,一些重要的现当代英国流散作家作品未能涉 及,还有一些可被用于流散文学研究的理论观点也未能提及,有待今后进行 补充研究。但总体而言,这部专著具有相当的学术价值和应用价值。该书聚 焦现当代英国流散文学对代表了大英帝国文化霸权的殖民主义"脑文本"的 生成、发展与维护机制反映与参与的研究,有助于我国流散文学研究的进一 步拓展。

#### **Works Cited**

聂珍钊:《文学伦理学批评导论》。北京:北京大学出版社,2014年。

[Nie Zhenzhao. Introduction to Ethical Literary Criticism. Beijing: Peking UP, 2014.]

- 徐彬:"想象'他者'与'他者'想象——现当代英国流散文学与英国国家身份构建",《外 国文学研究》2(2021):114-127。
- [Xu Bin. "Imagining the Other and the Other's Imagining: Modern and Contemporary British Diasporic Literature and the Construction of the British National Identity." Foreign Literature Studies 2 (2021): 114-127.]
- ---: 《现当代英国流散文学研究》。中国社会科学出版社,2021年。
- [ ... Modern and Contemporary British Diaspora Literature Studies. Beijing: China Social Sciences Press, 2021.]
- 朱振武、袁俊卿: "流散文学的时代表征及其世界意义——以非洲英语文学为例", 《中国社 会科学》7 (2019): 135-158。
- [Zhu Zhenwu and Yuan Junqing. "Diasporic Literature as a Reflection of the Age and Its World Significance: A Case Study of African Literature in English." Social Sciences in China 7 (2019): 135-158.]

中西互鉴视域下的英国形式主义美学:评《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》

# British Formalist Aesthetics from Chinese-Western Dual Perspectives: A Review of *British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice*

马 晔 (Ma Ye) 代显梅 (Dai Xianmei)

内容摘要: 英国形式主义美学是20世纪初期的一股美学思潮,它以东西贯通和古今相融为特性,推动并实现欧洲艺术从"再现"到"表现"的转向,催生并推进了现代主义文学的发展。高奋教授对英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践做了全面研究,其独特性有三点:首先,它从中西双重审美视野出发,系统研究英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践,具有原创性与开拓性;其次,它具有理论与实践相结合的特点,不仅阐明形式主义美学理论的渊源、内涵、方法,而且剖析美学理论在艺术批评、文学创作和传记创作中的运用;最后,它体现了中国诗学在西方文艺研究中的建构作用和中国学者的创新精神。

**关键词:**英国形式主义美学;中西互鉴;《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作 实践研究》

**作者简介**:马晔,浙江大学外国语学院博士研究生,主要从事英国现代主义文学研究;代显梅,中国人民大学外国语学院教授,主要从事英美文学研究。

**Title:** British Formalist Aesthetics from Chinese-Western Dual Perspectives: A Review of *British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice* 

**Abstract:** British formalist aesthetics was an aesthetic trend at the beginning of the 20 <sup>th</sup> century, which was characterized by the integration of East and West and the blending of the ancient and the modern, promoting and realizing the turning from "representation" to "expression" in European art, and inspiring and advancing the development of modernist literature. Professor Gao Fen has made a systematic study of British formalist aesthetics and its literary writing practice, and its characteristics are reflected in three aspects: firstly, it is an original and pioneering monograph that systematically studies British formalist aesthetics and its literary writing practice from the dual aesthetic perspectives of China and the West; secondly, it combines theory with practice, not only elucidating the origins, connotations and methods of

formalist aesthetic theories, but also analyzing the application of aesthetic theories in art criticism, literary writing, and biographical writing; finally, it reflects the constructive role of Chinese poetics in Western literary studies and the innovative spirit of a Chinese scholar.

Keywords: british formalist aesthetics; Chinese-Western dual perspectives; British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice

Author: Ma Ye is a doctoral candidate at School of International Studies, Zhejiang University (Hangzhou 310058, China), specializing in British modernism (Email: ymliter@yeah.net). Dai Xianmei is Professor at School of Foreign Languages, Renmin University of China (Beijing 100872, China), specializing in Anglo-American literature (Email: daixianmei@ruc.edu.cn).

英国形式主义美学是 20 世纪初期兴起并盛行于英国文艺界的一股美学思 潮,其理论创立者是艺术批评家罗杰·弗莱(Roger Fry)和克莱夫·贝尔(Clive Bell),其文学创作实践者是小说家弗吉尼亚·伍尔夫(Virginia Woolf)和 传记家利顿·斯特拉奇(Lytton Strachey)。它有力地推动了欧洲艺术从"再 现"至"表现"的转向(高奋 4)1,催生并推进了现代主义文学的发展。在 《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》(British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice, 2021) 一书中, 作者高奋敏锐捕捉到英国 形式主义美学家对中国传统文化的喜爱和接受,从中西互鉴的双重视野出发, 系统性地探讨了英国形式主义美学的渊源、内涵、实践与价值, 体现和阐发 了中国学者的独特视野和原创观点。

这是一部在中西双重审美视野中对英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践 进行整体考察的学术专著。它将布鲁姆斯伯里文化圈中四位重要美学家和作 家的理念与创作置于西方"形式"概念史与英国近代美学史的大背景中,探 讨其对西方美学传统的继承与创新,又以中国诗学范畴言志说、意境说、形 神说、情景说等进行观照,深入阐明其思想、方法与价值,旨在揭示英国形 式主义美学的深刻性和重要性,以及对英国现代主义文学的深远影响。全书 共五章,第一章追溯和阐明英国形式主义美学的思想基础,第二、三两章分 别梳理、概括和分析弗莱、贝尔的形式主义美学理论,第四、五两章则分别 探讨伍尔夫、斯特拉奇的形式主义创作实践。

第一章将视野拉至西方美学的源头,追溯自古希腊以来的"形式"概 念演变和西方传统美学,为之后的英国形式主义美学研究夯实了基础。它梳 理了从毕达哥拉斯学派的"数理形式"、柏拉图的"理式"、亚里士多德的 "四因说"到19世纪唯美主义的"形式"概念史,指出西方"形式"概念体

<sup>1</sup> 本文相关引文均出自高奋:《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》(杭州:浙江大 学出版社,2021年)。下文只标注页码,不再一一说明。

现了"对本原的揭示"(60),而英国形式主义美学则展现了对传统形式概 念的"继承、突破和推进"(49)。它概述了17-18世纪英国经验主义美学、 19世纪英国浪漫主义美学、维多利亚时期美学和唯美主义美学,指出:在方 法论上,英国美学家"经历了从经验归纳法到有机整体性的发展历程"; 在美学观点上,他们"从创作主体、社会功用和内在形式三个方面拓展对 '美'的认识"(103)。英国形式主义美学在理论内涵和方法论上均体现了 对英国近代美学理论的"继承"和"拓展"(49)。

第二章从弗莱其人其思想、实践美学、情感说、形式说和艺术批评五个 方面阐明弗莱的形式主义美学。它指出弗莱作为一名博采众长的学者,在科 学与艺术,艺术实践与艺术批评,艺术批评与美学,美学与其他学科等四个 维度实现了融会贯通,为其形式主义美学奠定了基础。弗莱的形式主义美学 是"一种纯粹的实践美学"(113),其基点是审美体验,具备归纳性、审美 性与生命性特征。弗莱提出"艺术是情感的交流,以情感为目的"的"情感 说"(122),以此推动欧洲艺术趣味从"再现"到"表现"的转向。他的 "形式说"有三重内涵: "表现统一性和意蕴统一性", "有意味和有表现 力的形式",以及"诗意狂喜与造型结构的完美统一",与刘勰的"神与物 游"(162)具有共通性。他的艺术批评不同于欧洲传统的文学性、道德性或 印象式批评,具有"知人论世"和"以意逆志"(162)的特点,"倡导用批 评家之心领悟作品(作家)的心意",以"获得生命体验的共鸣和洞见", 揭示艺术作品中的"生命真谛"(182)。

第三章从贝尔其人其思想、视觉艺术本质、形式理论和艺术批评四个 方面论析了贝尔的形式主义美学。它指出贝尔良好的教育背景,对艺术的 兴趣,以及布鲁姆斯伯里文化圈的浸染,促成了他的形式主义美学理论。 贝尔提出视觉艺术的本质是"有意味的形式"(188),其艺术宗旨是"创 造形式与表现审美情感"(189),其形而上学目标是"表现终极现实" (195),具有精神性、历史性和伦理性特征。贝尔的形式理论从学理上论 析了欧洲绘画从"再现"到"表现"的重大转向的本质和方法,与中国北 宋文人画从"写实"走向"写意"具有一定的相通性(200),如"有意味 的形式"/"画意不画形"(205)的创作宗旨,"物与心交"/"身与竹 化"(208)的构思模式等。贝尔以"有意味的形式"为标准,重新考察西方 艺术史,其先锋性、颠覆性的艺术批评唤起了学界与公众对艺术本质的再思 考。

第四章聚焦伍尔夫在弗莱和贝尔影响下所构建的"生命创作说"和"情 感形式说"(238),着重分析其形式美学思想在《雅各的房间》《达洛维 夫人》和《伦敦风景》中的体现。与弗莱和贝尔的形式主义美学建构路径一 样,伍尔夫的小说理论同样体现出从批判模仿论到推崇情感说的走向。她批 判物质主义小说和精神主义小说,在领悟英、俄、法、古希腊等多国经典的

背景下,提出"小说是记录人的生命的艺术"的文学本质说和"形式是情感 关系的构成和情感关系的表现"(261)的形式说,开创了全新的现代主义小 说形式。在文学创作实践中, 伍尔夫以"笔简意远"模式表现了《雅各的房 间》的"生命精神"(261),以"有意味的形式"表现了《达洛维夫人》的 "伦理选择"中隐含的中国道家思想(275),以"情景交融"表现了伦敦随 笔中的"物境"、"情境"和"意境"(297)。

第五章探讨斯特拉奇在形式主义美学影响下提出的"传记生命说"和"简 约形式说"(307),解析其形式观在《维多利亚名人传》和《维多利亚女王 传》中的体现,并讨论其"新传记"对当代"传记小说"的影响(335)。与 弗莱、贝尔和伍尔夫的观点相通,斯特拉奇认为传记旨在表现人的生命,以体 验其自身为目的,传记的形式具有"简约性"、"精神自由"和"历史与生命 的交融性"(312)三大特性。他用"有意味的形式"(313)表现《维多利亚 名人传》中的伦理选择和人性品德,用"形神合一"(327)表现《维多利亚 女王传》中的女王风范和人格品性。他的"新传记"以"创作理念的生命性" 与"创作形式的艺术化"(335)实现了对传统传记的突破,拓宽了当代传记 小说的创作之路。

《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》从西方美学、哲学、文 学、艺术、中国传统诗学等多元视角审视英国现代文论和艺术,体现了作者 扎实的学术底蕴和良好的整体观照能力。它坚持"以我为主,为我所用" (33)的立场,阐发了中国学者的独到见解,其价值主要体现在三个方面:

首先,它从中西双重审美视野出发,系统研究英国形式主义美学及其文 学创作实践,具有原创性与开拓性。它将英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实 践置于西方美学史和西方文艺史的长河中,细致梳理其思想渊源,考察各时 期、各流派间的复杂关系,阐明弗莱和贝尔等人对西方传统的继承性与创新 性。同时以中国诗学为镜,用基于审美感悟的中国诗学范畴情志说、情景 说、形神说、意境说、知人论世、以意逆志等照亮同样基于审美感悟的英国 形式主义美学及其文学创作实践、阐明其渊源、方法、路径、内涵和价值。

其次,它具有理论与实践相结合的特点,不仅阐明形式主义美学理论的 渊源、内涵、方法,而且剖析美学理论在艺术批评、文学创作和传记创作中 的运用。它一方面通过整体观照和梳理分析,系统而深入地论析了弗莱的情 感说、形式说和贝尔的视觉艺术理论、形式理论,充分阐明其内涵和价值。 它另一方面又从理论家和作家的生平经历、艺术批评、文学批评、文学创作 等多方面入手, 对繁杂的材料进行了充分整合, 由表及里地阐明了弗莱和贝 尔的艺术批评,伍尔夫的小说创作和斯特拉奇的传记创作对形式主义美学的 实践。

最后,它体现了中国诗学在西方文艺研究中的建构作用和中国学者的创 新精神。该书基于英国形式主义美学家和文学家对中国文化的了解和吸收,尝 试用中国传统诗学范畴深入阐明其创新价值,比如:以中国诗学"情志"范畴 为参照,揭示弗莱"情感说"的内涵与价值:以中国诗学"知人论世"与"以 意逆志"为参照,阐明弗莱艺术批评不同于西方传统的生命取向;用中国北宋 文人画理论的"写意"转向与贝尔形式理论的"表现"转向的对比来阐明两者 在破旧立新方面的异同;以中国老庄之"道"为参照,剖析伍尔夫《达洛维夫 人》的伦理观;用中国诗学的"形神合一"说解读斯特拉奇《维多利亚女王 传》中形式和意蕴的融合等。这些研究例证从中西文化两端切入,通过比照和 互鉴加深了我们对西方文论和文学的领悟。它旨在为中国特色的原创性外国文 艺研究开辟路径, 无疑是中国诗学"走出去"的一次有益尝试。正如陈众议所 说, "外国文学学者应着眼于当今世界历史新格局,立志高远,为推进具有世 界影响的中国人文社会科学、'三大体系'建设和构筑人类命运共同体贡献力 量"(刘白 谢敏敏 233)。该书正体现了这样的开拓和创新精神。

#### **Works Cited**

- 高奋: 《英国形式主义美学及其文学创作实践研究》。杭州: 浙江大学出版社,2021年。
- [Gao Fen. British Formalist Aesthetics and Its Literary Writing Practice. Hangzhou: Zhejiang UP, 2021.]
- 刘白、谢敏敏: "新中国 70 年外国文学研究:回顾与展望——中国外国文学学会第十五届双年 会综述",《外国文学评论》4(2019),232-236。
- [Liu Bai and Xie Minmin. "70 Years of Foreign Literature Research in New China: Review of the 15th Biennial Conference of Chinese Foreign Literature Association." Foreign Literature Review 4 (2019): 232-36.]

# Sound of Silence: A Review of A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Contemporary Western Literary Theories

### Wang Yingzi

**Abstract:** The book A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Contemporary Western Literary Theories focuses on Bakhtin's research and explores basic laws and methods of influence research from the dimensions of time, space, subject, and communication channels. Based on presenting context, interpreting thoughts trends, and distinguishing concepts, this book starts with a clear question awareness, that is, Bakhtin's image is "ubiquitous and difficult to locate" in the development history of contemporary Western literary theory, produces a detailed text analysis and has innovative and transcendent thinking.

**Keywords:** Bakhtin; contemporary western literary theory; influence research

**Author: Wang Yingzi**, Ph.D. in literature, is Lecturer in School of Humanities and Research Institute of Literary and Art Criticism of Hangzhou Normal University (Hangzhou 311100, China). Her research interests in new media criticism, sound studies and auditory culture (Email: yingziwang1225@qq.com).

标题: 寂静之声: 评《巴赫金对当代西方文学理论的影响研究》

内容摘要:《巴赫金对当代西方文学理论的影响研究》一书聚焦巴赫金的研究,从时间、空间、主体、传播渠道等维度探讨影响研究的基本规律和方法。本书以呈现语境、解读思潮、区分概念为基础,从明确的问题意识出发,即巴赫金的形象在当代西方文学理论发展史上的"无处不在、难以定位"产生详细的文本分析,具有创新性和超越性思维。

关键词: 巴赫金; 当代西方文学理论; 影响研究

作者简介: 王樱子,文学博士,杭州师范大学人文学院、文艺批评研究院讲师,主要学术研究领域为新媒介文艺批评、声音研究与听觉文化。本文系"当代中国对话主义文学理论的话语建构研究"【项目批号: 22AZW003】的阶段性成果。

"If the difficulty of locating is the biggest mystery that Bakhtin left for posterity, then Bakhtin's influence is everywhere, and it is its most distinctive academic effect" (Zeng 4). A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Contemporary Western

Literary Theories shows the unique discourse and way of thinking of Bakhtin's literary theory. More importantly, it shows Bakhtin's thoughts and image's pervasive and far-reaching influence on 20th-century Western theoretical ideas. Formalism, structuralism, post-structuralism, semiotics, reader reflection theory, neo-Marxism, neo-historicism, and feminism can almost all find ideological resonance in his thoughts.

#### Dilemma about Bakhtin: Embracing Changes in Ideological Turn

Bakhtin's ghost is everywhere in the history of Western literary theory, wandering around. However, it is also challenging to grasp his image. This is also the author's question awareness in the discussion. Whether in the overall structure or the writing logic specific to each subsection, A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Western Contemporary Literary Theories follows the objective presentation of representative topics and historical context. It has done a lot of research paths for extended critical discussion. From the perspective of the external environment, the research of any scholar cannot be separated from the time and context in which it is located, and the influence of research cannot be separated from the trend of thoughts and representative scholars at every important historical node. Therefore, in the first and second chapters, the author selects Kristeva and Todorov as representative scholars and elaborates on the complex relationship between them and Bakhtin's thoughts, such as inheritance, rereading, transformation, dialogue, and debate. Through the presentation of this book, we can see that Bakhtin's studies have an extensive and complex system, its internal academic resources are abundant, and the motifs and keywords that can be excavated are also varied. However, Zeng Jun is not satisfied with purely collating work but attempts to reflect on the future development space of influence research through historical data analysis: "Traditional comparative poetics research often adopts a simple sender - media (communicator) - recipient's one-dimensional study. But the influencing factors of real literary theory are much more complicated" (25). At the same time, Bakhtin's significance as the center of the issue has already surpassed his writings and thoughts but turned into a more changeable image and a more abstract specter. New content is continuously generated in later generations' acceptance, rereading, and re-creation. This book emphasizes in many places that in the long history, Bakhtin provided not only his thoughts but also an existence that was symbolized and embodied in the history of acceptance; that is, what the author said in the book that "the image of Bakhtin who has become a Western postmodern academic star and those contemporary scholars who regard Bakhtin as a theoretical resource of postmodernism" (205). Just like

the table of changes in Bakhtin's image compiled in the Introduction, Bakhtin's image has been reshaped in different eras, countries, and scholars, with substantial temporal and spatial differences between them. For example, in France in the 1960s, Bakhtin's image may have been interpreted as a post-formalist by Kristeva or a structuralist poetics introduced by Todorov. However, in Britain in the 1970s, he became an image of a Marxist sociolinguist or a more avant-garde formalist innovator. Although the tabulation of information structure is called an imperfect and concise expression, it is evident that a lot of work has been condensed in it, and the author only put this work in the introduction as an introductory presentation.

Another excellent value of this book lies in the detailed distinction and understanding of various theoretical terms and academic concepts. This is an essential foundation for all extended thinking not to be "off track", and it is also the advantage of a scholar with a systematic understanding of Bakhtin. The author's selection of essential concepts in Bakhtin's theory is not random. Instead, the author chooses the most critical or historical nodal meaning phrases based on a holistic grasp. What's more remarkable is the author's understanding of these phrases. The distinction of concepts also considers the historical changes and the different interpretations of different scholars, making each concept have subtle differences in different eras or scholars. Taking Kristeva's concept of "threshold" in Chapter 1 as an example, the author finds through comparative analysis that, in terms of her acceptance of Bakhtin, Kristeva's concept of "threshold" comes from Bakhtin's "chronotope". The author points out the importance of this concept in the history of Western literary criticism: "'Threshold' connected Kristeva's thoughts in the 1970s including the subject of the process, the intertextual thoughts of intertextuality, and the realization of language and the crossover of cultural and political boundaries and many other themes" (94-95). Even concerning the "Western" framework, the author also reminds us in many places in the book, thinking that our observations from an external perspective should be more detailed rather than directly treating "Western" as a chaotic whole. Whether it is the apparent differences in the cultural background of European and American countries or the unique position of Bakhtin's Russia in the entire Western world, this book has carried out key distinctions and clear explanations, especially for the context of Russian literature and culture. The theoretical investigation helps show the cultural background of Bakhtin's many theories. For example, the author examines the medieval folk culture background of Bakhtin's theory of carnivalization. This kind of culture has another expression in Russian cultural theory, namely "folk culture", which is opposite to "higher culture (professional culture)". From this perspective, we can understand this source culture

more intuitively, "implying a complex relationship between folk culture (or popular culture) and higher culture (or elite culture)" (Zeng 208).

The academic influence and acceptance of Bakhtin are manifested on multiple levels. Some are direct conceptual references, and some are ideologically invisible references. Therefore, the reliability of this part of the research is primarily derived from the researcher's overall trend of thoughts. In-depth understanding of related academic trends and representative scholars, the author of this book, Zeng Jun, has written many unique research books related to Bakhtin, such as Research on Bakhtin's Reception History in China(2004). These long and meticulous accumulations have greatly ensured the depth and comprehensiveness of his Bakhtin research. From ideological trends and doctrines to specific scholars, Bakhtin's various traces in the history of Western literary theory are presented in detail. The author's extensive reading and collation work and his firm grasp of materials could be presented this way. In-depth understanding makes the whole book present a complex form of multiple voices speaking simultaneously.

#### Critical Rereading: Seeing Growth in the Gap

A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Western Contemporary Literary Theories never tried to portray Bakhtin as a perfect body without flaws. On the contrary, the author is calm and restrained in his observations of Bakhtin, and he does not hide away from possible flaws in Bakhtin's thoughts. For example, in the book, the author sharply pointed out the flaws in Bakhtin's theory through the comparative study of Wayne Booth and Bakhtin, that is, the neglect of female identity. When talking about a specific homogenous relationship between Bakhtin's and Rabelais's theory, the author has a precise and vivid description of this lack of female perspective: "Rabelais can recognize the existence of women, he can fool them or praise them, treat them as a class, but what he cannot or does not want to do is to 'see' them" (282). So Chapter 4 focuses on the topic of feminist literary criticism. The author first states that his question awareness and research on feminism, both in the subject matter and narrative method, differ from the previous chapters. In this chapter, the author discusses why Bakhtin's theory "does not seem to have a master-level influence" on feminism and "this is not an unintentional negligence". However, the author also emphasizes that Bakhtin's extensive influence on feminist criticism is unquestionable. Many feminist critics have absorbed his theories to varying degrees and "jointly promoted the transformation of feminist literary criticism" (Zeng 220). Through the interpretation of the concepts of body, carnival, chronotope, and so on, the author critically pointed out that there are breaks and stitches between Bakhtin's theory and feminist criticism. In a sense, Bakhtin's theory, such as dialogue, carnival, and polyphony, only provides new interpretation framework ideas and discourses for related feminist literary criticism issues at the application level. On the other hand, its essence may be just a powerful tool for analyzing texts and therefore presents a certain uniqueness in history: "In Bakhtin's carnival theory of feminist literary critics, the duality of death and rebirth is once again reduced to the revolutionary nature of destruction" (Zeng 245).

While Bakhtin's thoughts are more vivid due to their imperfections, A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Western Contemporary Literary Theories also tries to show that Bakhtin's image is not already solidified and completed. Still, the dynamics and generativity are what it is. These characteristics are also the biggest reason this ghost can wander among Western literary theories. The awareness of communication and dialogue appears in the overall writing structure of this book. When discriminating some similar views or thought paths, the author not only tries to clarify the differences and distinctions between them but also pays more attention to their similarities. As the author clarified in this book, he wants to do not purely historical sorting but more to show the versatility and variability of Bakhtin's influence with texts and materials, which naturally also includes his critics of Bakhtin. Criticism expresses the objectivity of research by being closely connected with time and context. For example, in the 1960s and 1970s, this was the second time Bakhtin was discovered in Western academia. The author concludes that "Western Marxism is in the process of disintegrating popular culture studies from the Frankfurt School to the Birmingham School during this period. Western academia accepted and reinterpreted Bakhtin's carnival theory in this changing cultural context" (209). For a monograph researched by a scholar, the amount of information may not surpass that of reference books. Still, it is far beyond the existence of reference books in academic depth, reflected in the author's subjective writing. This kind of subjectivity does not mean being divorced from reality and disrespecting objective data but showing the author's point of view to Bakhtin. The solid critical thinking mode of this book is closely related to the author's philosophy of communicating and dialoguing between different scholars and different thoughts; Bakhtin's dialogue theory may inspire him. What this book presents is not only Bakhtin's thoughts or even a diachronic summary of Bakhtin's influence but also reflects the relevant critical scholars and the origin of their thoughts in contemporary Western literary theories from the perspective of the study of Bakhtin.

When talking about critical concepts such as "remote context", the author mentioned that from the perspective of such a broad and flowing time dimension, "Bakhtin's thoughts of dialogue is infinite. There is no absolute beginning, and there is no absolute end" (Zeng 321). Although the author has done a lot of research on Bakhtin's influence, he still holds an open attitude and believes that Bakhtin's research still has a vast discourse space, and it is not limited to all the work he has done so far. In the last chapter of the book, the author still tries to extend to a topic with great academic discourse space, that is, the vital connection between related Marxist theories and Bakhtin. This is a general summary and combing and an enlightening extended topic. Just like Bakhtin's polyphony theory, this book also presents a polyphonic structure. It can be seen that it faithfully respects historical facts, combs relevant documents in detail, and pursues Bakhtin's theory in the context of contemporary Western literary theory. At the same time, the objective presentation always maintains polyphonic, holistic dialectical thinking that transcends one-dimensional research.

#### Multi-tone Chorus: Hear Resonance in Silence

The influence of thoughts is that in a long time, the body of the scholar himself has disappeared, but his theory is still like a star, shining a unique brilliance from time to time in the silent night sky. A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Western Contemporary Literary Theories is an insight into Bakhtin's ghost image, where subtle reverberation can still be heard in silence.

A simple and interesting observation is that "sound" is one of the essential keywords throughout this book. The dialogue, polyphony, chorus, heteroglossia, and symmetry used in the text are all words closely related to the concept of sound. There is also a detailed explanation showing that their selection and use are not accidental and random. In Chapter 5, the author compares Wayne Booth and Bakhtin from the narrative rhetoric and ethical dimensions of the novel theory and uses the appropriate metaphor of "simultaneous chorus" to express the similarity and complex ideological relationship between Booth and Bakhtin. Although there are differences in details and academic paths between the two in specific viewpoints, they are essentially resonant, which is similar to the polyphonic structure proposed by Bakhtin. The "simultaneous chorus" in literary criticism theory means that scholars are responsible for their own words, and together they form an overall structure with a certain harmony and cooperation. It is not limited to the era but has common influences on later generations. The author believes that the completion of this simultaneous chorus comes from "Booth saw Bakhtin's multiple selves in the social interaction and the characteristics of polyphony and dialogue caused by it. He believes that Bakhtin established the literature of scrutiny and evaluation.

Another broader dimension of the work is that our language is a chorus of multiple languages" (Zeng 271). Therefore, in the reference and learning of Bakhtin, Booth also gradually developed and perfected his novel theory. The author finds that both Bakhtin and Wayne Booth believed that there was no objectivity in the novel and admitted that the author's voice always exists in the work. Bakhtin's discussion of sound prompted Booth to begin to think about the question of "listening" in the power theory of language: "Booth accepted Bakhtin's point of view and believed that language at any given moment in history, from head to toe, is a variety of ideological contradictions, different social groups, different era ideas, and development trends" (273).

From a more abstract point of view, this book attempts to make Bakhtin's ghost make thoughtful sounds again. Still, these sounds are by no means just amplifying the decibel of the original sound but a transcendent and innovative speech of the author himself. In this book, the author does not only examine the various types of carnival theories that have been interpreted in detail but to relax it into the overall vision of Western literary criticism, looking for the critical influence it is positioned to produce. It can be seen that multiple doctrines have appropriated Bakhtin's carnival theory in the history of contemporary Western thoughts. Their expropriation at different levels also reflects the tremendous academic potential and interpretability of carnival theory from the side. As the dynamics of sound waves, Bakhtin's academic thoughts show dynamic variability. They cannot be statically positioned in a specific form, and when the way of "listening" is different, Bakhtin's ghost can also be emitted as a different kind of whisper. Similar to the immersive atmosphere that sound can create, research on the influence of a scholar is also enormously immersive. Only by immersing in it can you go deep, opening up the pattern from the details, and have an empathetic reading of the scholar. However, this dual polyphony can bring about dialectical thinking by being able to listen, feel, and understand while jumping out, calmly staring, observing, and criticizing. The author refers to Bakhtin's paradigm of influence on Booth and their common influence on Western narrative theorists as a kind of "resonance of the affected person", and summarizes it to three characteristics as "different acceptance dimensions and methods for the same theory" "different scholars focus on the acceptance and development according to their question awareness" and "the homogeneous mixture of indirect influence and acceptance" (Zeng 298). Such as in Bakhtin's dialogue theory, only the two-way collision and exchange of soul and thoughts can have dynamic and long-term progress, not just one-way output and reception. In terms of creativity, the author integrates Bakhtin's essential concepts

and often connects them cleverly in unexpected places. For example, the author believes Bakhtin's hyper-linguistics can be used to better grasp and understand his dialogue theory (or dialogism thoughts) as the first breakthrough point. The author shows that "social polyphony" of ideological symbols has become the basis of Bakhtin's hyper-linguistic philosophy: "Because of different subject's 'polyphony', the controversy and analysis of ideological consciousness could be generated, and it will be possible to start an endless dialogue. This kind of 'polyphony' is another theoretical expression in *Dostoevsky's Poetics*: 'multi-voice character'" (Zeng 319). This kind of image interpretation not only makes the development of the concept clearer but also opens up the space for thinking. The multiple uses of sound-related concepts in the book are the best examples.

The book starts with a straightforward awareness question and ends with unfinished thinking. The writing logic in it allows a research monograph to break the boundaries brought about by the accumulation of historical materials but reflects an inclusive, consistent attitude. In the introduction chapter, the author made it clear that the book's research goals are twofold: it takes Western literary theory masters and important literary theory trendsetters as the main research objects, and explores how Bakhtin influenced them, how did they accept and creatively develop Bakhtin's thoughts; then is to constructively reflect on the research methods of comparative poetics on this basis and to form a more conscious and systematic research paradigm. These two paths have their strong voices in the book, and they constantly resonate in the context of history. Just like the precise description of his question awareness at the beginning of the book, Bakhtin's ghost is "ubiquitous but difficult to locate", this naturally contradictory metaphor is presented throughout the work as an abstract logic during the writing. This is also one of the essential meanings of Bakhtin's influence research: personal thoughts are not limited to his writings. The interpretation, feedback, and rewriting of later scholars is also an important dimension and continuous development and transformation of Bakhtin's thoughts. In the seemingly quiet place, the author listens carefully to the sound, and the thoughts flow and spread with the sound waves in a long history: "Based on the present, responding to the past, and imagining the future, it may be the cultural position with Bakhtin's dialogism spirit" (Zeng 321).

#### Works Cited

Zeng Jun. A Study of Bakhtin's Influence on Western Contemporary Literary Theories. Beijing: Social Sciences Academic Press, 2021.



## Published by Knowledge Hub Publishing Company Limited Hong Kong

